

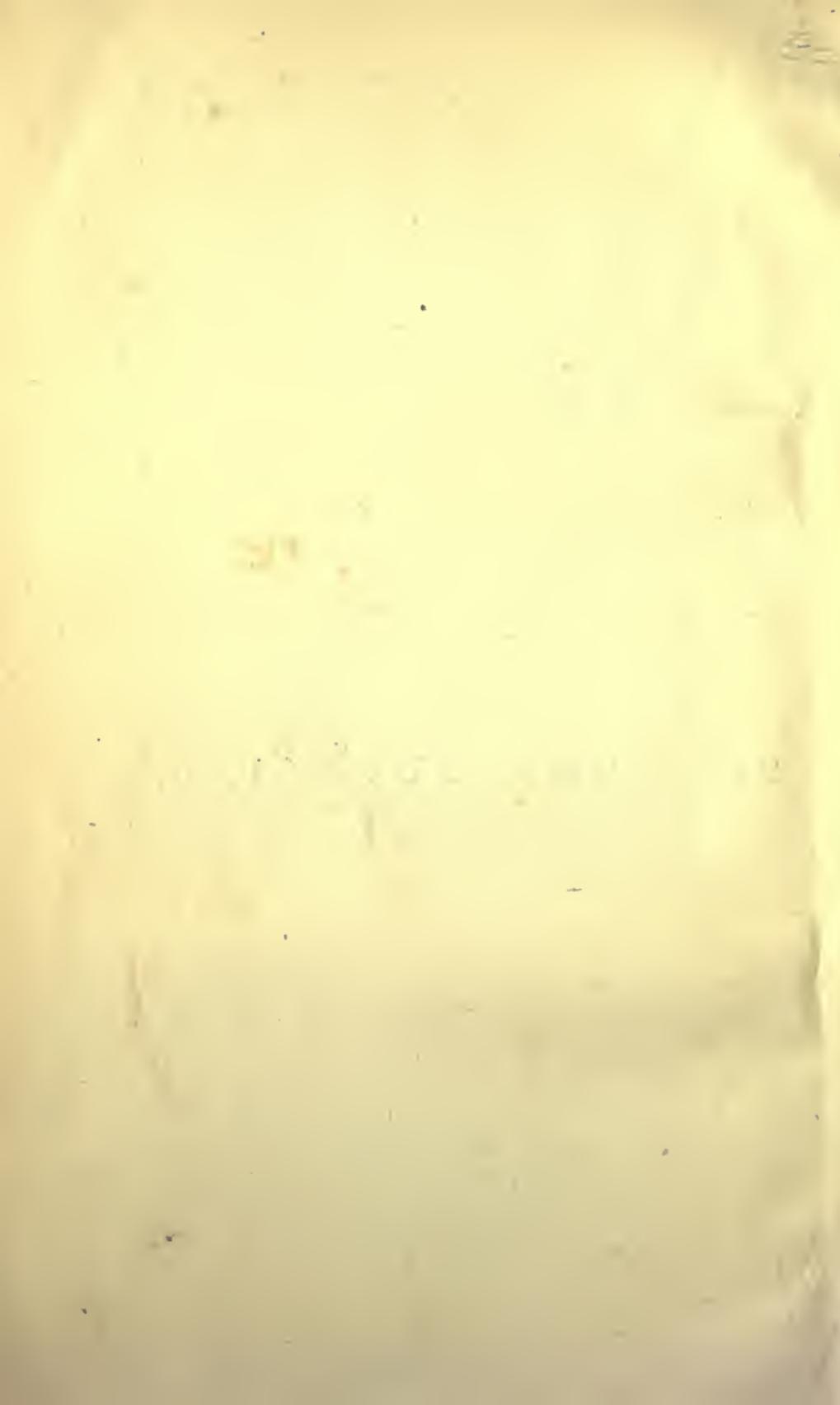








THE POEMS AND PLAYS  
OF  
SIR JOHN SUCKLING.







Drawn by J Thurston.

Engraved by R. Newton.

### SIR JOHN SUCKLING.

*From an original Picture in the Ashmolean  
Museum, Oxford?*

~~59425~~

# THE POEMS, PLAYS

*AND OTHER REMAINS*

OF

# SIR JOHN SUCKLING

*65709  
25-5-105.*

A NEW EDITION

*With a Copious Account of the Author, Notes, and an  
Appendix of Illustrative Pieces.*

VOL. I.

LONDON

RANK & WILLIAM KERSLAKE, 13 BOOKSELLERS' ROW

1874

PR  
3718

A1

1874

v. 1

Suckling, whose numbers could invite  
Alike to wonder and delight ;  
And with new spirit did inspire  
The Thespian scene and Delphic lyre :  
Is thus express'd in either part  
Above the humble reach of art.  
Drawn by the pencil, here you find  
His form—by his own pen, his mind.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> [These lines occur beneath the (very indifferent) portrait by Marshall  
prefixed to all the old editions of the works, 1646-96. They were written,  
as elsewhere pointed out, by Thomas Stanley.]



## *INTRODUCTORY NOTICE.*

—o—

A NEW edition of the remains of SIR JOHN SUCKLING, in verse and prose, has for many years past been a desideratum. The volume which is now offered to the public embraces all that is known to be extant from his pen. The account of his life which is prefixed has been reprinted from that which accompanies a volume of selections from his writings published in 1836 by the late Suffolk historian, the Rev. Alfred Suckling; but it has been carefully revised, and in certain places enlarged.

The tracts which form the Appendix are in themselves curious, and they throw some light on Suckling's history, and on the circumstances by which he was surrounded and influenced.

The play of "The Goblins," which has been inserted in Dodsley's collection, is now printed with the notes of Isaac Reed and others, as its retention in the new edition of the OLD PLAYS will probably, under the present circumstances, hardly seem desirable.

The caricature print, which is found in the early impressions, seemed to be unworthy of reproduction.

On the whole, it was thought expedient to adopt, in the text of Suckling, the modern standard of spelling and punctuation.

Considering the early age at which he passed away, and what he has left behind him in print, not to name his political exploits, it will be allowed, no doubt, that Suckling was a man of no ordinary genius, nor have we it in our power, we apprehend, to raise a better monument to him, than a faithful text of his authentic writings.

W. C. HAZLITT.

KENSINGTON, *June 1874.*



# L I F E OF SIR JOHN SUCKLING.

---

IT has been observed by an author, who has surpassed all others in the path of biography, that, to write the life of a literary man with success, his biographer should not confine himself to the common incidents of life, but relate with minuteness his studies, his mode of living, the means by which he attained to excellence, and his opinion of his own works. But it is a circumstance unfavourable to him who lives in a period remote from the object of his inquiry, that sources of information like these enumerated are obtained with difficulty, and must be received with caution. To place those already discovered in the most judicious order, to ascertain their authenticity, and to weigh the respective value of conflicting testimonies, seems the chief employ-

ment of him who ventures to record the history of a man, over whose ashes nearly two centuries have rolled.

John Suckling was born in his father's house at Whitton, in the parish of Twickenham, and county of Middlesex, and was baptized there on the 10th of February, in the year 1608-9. By both parents his descent was respectable : his mother was sister to Sir Lionel Cranfield, afterwards created Earl of Middlesex and Lord Treasurer ; and his father, who had been returned in 1601 as member for the borough of Dunwich, was subsequently made Principal Secretary of State and Comptroller of the Household to King James I. Under his successor, the unfortunate Charles, he retained these dignified situations, and was by that monarch elevated to the additional rank of a Privy Councillor. This gentleman, who enjoyed the honour of knighthood, was the youngest son, by the first marriage, of Robert Suckling,<sup>1</sup> Esq. of Woodton, in the county of Norfolk, who had represented the city of Norwich in the two parliaments of 1570 and 1585, and whose ancestors had possessed estates in that village from the year 1348.

Aubrey relates, on the authority of Mrs Bond, the wife of one of the poet's companions,<sup>2</sup> that Suckling

---

<sup>1</sup> [Robert Suckling was Mayor of Norwich in 1582. "Cal. of State Papers," D. S., 1580-1625, Addenda, p. 80.]

<sup>2</sup> Familiarly known by the name of "Jack Bond;" he is introduced by the poet in one or two of his poems as an interlocutor with himself; his social qualities, however, seem to have been this principal recommendation. [See particularly the present volume, pp. 38, 40.]

derived his vivacity and wit from his mother, for that “his father was but a dull fellow.” Whether any sallies of this lady’s brilliancy have been preserved, I know not; they have, at least, eluded my researches.

If Aubrey be correct, and the father excelled not in the charms of conversation, in the power

“ *Museo contingere cuncta lepore,*”

he was certainly a man of sound judgment and acute observation. The writer of these pages possesses letters, written by him on matters of family business,<sup>1</sup> in which a solidity of judgment and a knowledge of human nature are displayed in language of remarkable vigour; nor can it reasonably be imagined that without qualifications somewhat above an ordinary standard Sir John (the father) would have been selected by his sovereign as a Privy Councillor in times which, verging fast toward turbulence and rebellion, were already marked by increasing difficulties and open dissatisfaction.

Suckling’s father, in 1602, was Secretary to the Lord Treasurer.<sup>2</sup> In 1606 we find him filling same place in the Exchequer.<sup>3</sup> In October 1604 the manor of Wansworth, county of York, was granted to him in fee-farm.<sup>4</sup> On the 13th December in the same year, he became Receiver of Fines on Alien-

<sup>1</sup> [Many of his letters on public matters to various persons of note are in the Record Office, and two, addressed to Sir Julius Cæsar, in the British Museum.]

<sup>2</sup> [“Cal. of State Papers,” Dom., 1580–1625, p. 420.]

<sup>3</sup> [Ibid., p. 477.]

<sup>4</sup> [Ibid., 1603–10, p. 162.]

tions, in succession to Sir Arthur Aty.<sup>1</sup> On the 29th October 1607 he obtained a grant in fee-farm of the Rectory of Falmer, in Sussex.<sup>2</sup> In February 1619-20 he became Master of Requests; and in 1622 he was appointed Comptroller of the Royal Household, "paying well for the place."<sup>3</sup>

But in addition to these dignities which he already enjoyed, Sir John was also an aspirant to still higher preferment. In the "Sidney State Papers" is a letter written by Lord Leicester to his son, in September 1621, wherein he says, "It is not known who shall be Chancellor of the Exchequer, now my Lord Brooke doth give it over; it is between Sir Richard Weston and Sir John Suckling."

The appointment was conferred on Sir Richard Weston; but Sir John Suckling doubtless alleviated his chagrin by the enjoyment of a pension of one hundred pounds per annum, the patent for which may be seen in the seventeenth volume of Rymer's "Foedera," and in which his services are recited.<sup>4</sup> But Mrs Bond's estimate of the father's abilities is still further rendered questionable by the appearance of a copy of verses prefixed, amongst others, to Coryat's "Crudities," published in 1611.

It appears that the wits of the day joined in a series

---

<sup>1</sup> [“Cal. of State Papers,” Dom., p. 175.]

<sup>2</sup> [Ibid., 1603-10, p. 377.]

<sup>3</sup> [Ibid., 1619-23, pp. 161, 434.]

<sup>4</sup> [In the Parliament of 1626-7, the poet's father was returned for Sandwich. “Cal. of State Papers,” Dom., 1625-6, p. 230, 231.]

of panegyrical essays on that curious composition, and Sir John Suckling's muse is by no means the least entitled to commendation.

I shall not be dissuaded by the fear of incurring the charge of prolixity from inserting his effort :—

#### INCIPIT JOHANNES SUTCLIN.

Whether I thee should either praise or pitty,  
My senses at a great dilemma are :  
For when I thinke how thou hast travail'd farre,  
Can'st Greeke and Latin speake, art curteous, witty ;  
I thee in these, and, thee for them, commend ;  
But when I thinke, how thou, false friends to keepe,  
Dost weare thy body, and dost leese thy sleepe,  
I thee then pitty, and doe discommend.  
Thy feete have gone a painful pilgrimage,  
Thou many nights dost wrong thy hands and eyes,  
In writing of thy long apologies ;  
Thy tongue is, all the day, thy restlesse page.  
For shame, intreate them better : I this crave.  
So they more ease, and thou more wit shal't have.

Sir John's brother, Charles Suckling, of Woodton, in a MS. now before me, thus draws his portrait : “ He was a man of grave deportement and very comely person : of a fair complexion, with good features and flaxen haire.”

---

Of the early history of the subject of our narrative very little is known ; nor, if it were ascertained, can it be supposed much worth recording. It would be folly, therefore, to supply by crude conjecture the channels

of authentic information, and equally absurd to dwell on the relation of that precocious intellect which Langbaine has assigned him—a return, we are gravely informed, made for the injustice of nature, which had delayed the period of his birth two months beyond the usual term of gestation.

An event, however, of real importance to the interests of childhood occurred to our poet at the tender age of five years. His mother died at Norwich on the 28th of October 1613,<sup>1</sup> in the thirty-fifth year of her age. Whether deserving of the encomium of Aubrey or not, she was certainly a lady endued with many virtues, and tenderly beloved by her husband.

A splendid tomb, rich in statuary and allegorical sculpture, erected in the Church of St Andrew in that city, bears an inscription to her memory, wherein her worth is recorded in terms more modest than is customary in epitaphs of that day. Amongst her other qualifications, as if in corroboration of Aubrey's statement, her mental accomplishments are alluded to in direct terms :—

“Thou wert so good, so chast, *so wise*, so true.”<sup>2</sup>

Her husband entertained the same estimation of her worth to the last period of his life ; for in his will, dated but shortly before his decease, her portrait

<sup>1</sup> This is given by most of Suckling's biographers as the year of his birth ; they had not paid attention to chronological facts.

<sup>2</sup> [It is difficult to allow that the attribution of *wisdom* to the lady on her monument is an allusion “in direct terms” to her *mental accomplishments*.]

is singled out from other pictures which he possessed, and thus affectionately bequeathed :—

“ Item. I give to my loving brother in lawe, the Earl of Middlesex, my picture of my late dear wife, hanginge in my country house, amongst other pictures, in the little roome next the great hall; for the love he bare to my late deare wife, his most lovinge sister.”<sup>1</sup>

Soon after the death of his mother, Suckling was removed from his father’s care, and placed at a public school, though some uncertainty prevails as to the precise source of his earlier learning. If Aubrey can be relied on—and his statements of dates and facts connected with our poet are frequently very inaccur-

---

<sup>1</sup> This lady had issue two sons: John the eldest, the subject of the present memoir, Lionel, who died young and a bachelor; and four daughters. In the church of Pangbourne, in Oxfordshire, is a monument erected to the memories of three of these ladies, thus inscribed :

“ Within a vault, under the marble stones hereunto adjoining, resteth the bodyes of three sisters: Martha, Ann, and Mary; the daughters of the Right Honourable Sir John Suckling, of Whitton, in the county of Middlesex, Knight; who died Trouler of the Householde and one of the most honourable Privie Councell unto Kinge Charles the first. Martha was first maryed unto Sir George Sowthcott, of Shillingford, in the county of Devon, Knight; and dyed the wife of William Clagett, of Isleworth, in the county of Middlesex, Esquire. She dyed at the Bathe, the 29th of June 1661. Anne was marryed unto Sir John Davis, sonne of Sir John Davis, both Lords of this mannor, and dyed the 24th of July 1659. Mary Sucklinge dyed a virgine, the 17th of October 1658.” Elizabeth, the youngest daughter, died at an early age, and also unmarried.

rate—he was received at Westminster, but I have sought in vain for a confirmation of this assertion. The records of that establishment which relate to its scholars reach no higher than the middle of the last century, and it is certainly known that he was not admitted on the foundation. Nor are the presages of his genius better preserved, though so much celebrated by contemporary writers—a subject of greater regret ; for the earliest indications of poetical talent are always worthy of record, as they show how far art and study may improve a spirit which is the inspiration of nature alone.

In 1623 Suckling was removed to Cambridge, and matriculated at Trinity College.<sup>1</sup> He is entered there as John Suckling, junior—an epithet well merited, if we consider the date of his birth, though he was far from being so young as Davenant relates, who says he proceeded to Cambridge in his eleventh year, a statement well suited to accompany the assertion of Langbaine, that “he spoke Latin at five, and writ it at nine.” A little attention, however, to chronolo-

---

<sup>1</sup> In a letter, dated July 25th, 1678, “G. North, the master, and the Seniors of Trinity College in Cambridge,” request a donation from Robert Suckling, Esq. of Woodton (cousin to the poet), to assist them in erecting the library of that establishment, in Nevil’s Court. In this letter the college is termed “a kind of parent” towards his family, which had “always carried a great respect to their memory.” At the back of the letter is the following endorsement :—“ May 19th, 1679. My Father sent by Mr Brown, curate of Wootton, for me and himselfe, toward y<sup>e</sup>. building herein specified, £120.”—MS. pen. Ed.

gical facts will overset this marvellous tale, and reduce its exuberance to the limits of credibility. When a short sketch of the poet's life was hastily drawn up by the first collectors of his writings,<sup>1</sup> the date of his birth was inaccurately fixed in 1613, which event has already been shown to have occurred ~~five~~ years earlier. Thus his wonderful ripeness of intellect vanishes ; for, in place of speaking Latin at five and writing it at nine, these acquirements were less marvellously displayed at the ages of ten and fourteen. By the same method of correcting the chronology of Suckling's earlier days, he must have been sixteen, and not eleven, years old, as stated by Davenant, when he first repaired to the University of Cambridge. Though Davenant was "his intimate friend, and loved him intirely," yet his authority on this subject is of no great weight, as their acquaintance, though it afterwards ripened into friendship, was not formed till a much later period of their lives, when the similarity of their tastes and opinions had drawn them together. Davenant, who was the son of a vintner at Oxford, where he was born and educated, could not have been early associated with a youth of Suckling's connections, who was studying at a different university.

Although much credit is given to the subject of our narrative for his eminent attainments in the arts

---

<sup>1</sup> [Rather, by his earliest biographers, the early editions of his writings being unaccompanied by any particulars of his life.]

\* and sciences, I should conclude with Dodsley<sup>1</sup> that he was a polite rather than a deep scholar. Music, languages, and poetry were the accomplishments he most cultivated, and in which he was most desirous to excel; nor is it agreeable to the acknowledged vivacity of his constitution to imagine that more abstruse or graver subjects could very long engage his attention. Still his attainments must have been considerable, for we are told that "he early distinguished himself by the strength of his genius and capacity, which required less pains and application in him than it did in others to make himself master of whatever subject he pursued."

✓ His facility in acquiring languages is also noticed as having been very remarkable. But while he was thus pursuing his academical studies, he received an irreparable blow in the death of his father. The knight had contracted a second marriage with a daughter of a Mr Reeve, of Bury Saint Edmund's, an alliance which proved, in its ultimate effects, unfortunate to the interests of the poet, as much variance regarding family property arose at the father's decease. He died on the 27th of March 1627, in the fifty-eighth year of his age,<sup>2</sup> an event which the

---

<sup>1</sup> [Rather, perhaps, with Isaac Reed, the editor of Dodsley's "Old Plays" in 1780, and the writer of many of the prefatory notices. In Dodsley's own edition these are very scanty and few.]

<sup>2</sup> [A good deal about Sir John Suckling the elder is to be found in Mouros's "Acta Cancellariæ," 1847. See pp. 277-289. See also Ellis's "Original Letters," Third Series, iv. 191.]

constitutional gaiety of the son rendered peculiarly untoward, as the gravity of the father's character, which was remarkable, would have operated essentially in diverting him from many youthful indiscretions into which he fell from this early exposure to the allurements of a gay and luxurious court, to which his birth and connections had already introduced him. That the father entertained a like view of his situation and its consequent perils seems almost certain, for his will debars him from entering upon the possession of his estates till he had completed his twenty-fifth year.

Our poet's father was buried, by the side of his first wife, in the Church of St Andrew at Norwich. The poor of that city, with those of Twickenham and Whitton, share his bounties to the present hour; and in the former place annual sermons are preached, which his piety desired should, like his charities, be perpetual. The subject of one of these lectures shows his strong principle of reverential gratitude to God for the temporal prosperity he had enjoyed: he appoints "another sermon to be preached yearly at St Andrew's Church, on the Sunday after Michaelmas synod, between two and four o'clock, for acknowledging God's mercies and favours towards him." He died in very affluent circumstances,<sup>1</sup> and bequeathed to his eldest

---

<sup>1</sup> He died seised of the advowson and manors of Towthorpe and Wadsford, in Yorkshire; the advowson and manors of Barsham and Rose Hall, in Suffolk, and of Newton in Norfolk; with lands and estates in Twickenham, Isleworth, Sion, and

son his estates in Suffolk, Lincoln, and Middlesex. His jewels and personal effects were left principally to his widow and daughters, and his library to his sons, Lionel, the youngest, receiving a third part only.<sup>1</sup>

We arrive now at a point whence the adventures of Suckling's life are seen through a clearer horizon : nor can this be matter of astonishment, for the influence of birth, fortune, and person, united to talents and elegant accomplishments, has been felt and acknowledged in every stage of civilised society.

---

Lincoln ; the water-mills at Nafferton, in the county of York ; and houses and tenements in Ludgate Hill and Dorset Court, in London ; with houses and estates in the parish of St Andrew at Norwich.

<sup>1</sup> For the amusement of those ladies who may honour this sketch with a perusal, I subjoin the following items of Sir John Suckling's will, in which these bequests are contained :—“I give to my beloved daughter Martha, a fayre ring, with eleaven diamonds : and to my two pretty twynnes Anne and Mary I give two rings with dyamonds in either of them—viz., to Anne a ring with 13 dyamonds in it, and to Mary one ring with 7 dyamonds in it. Item, I give to Elizabeth, my youngest daughter, a jewell with 19 dyamonds in it, and my late wyfe's girdle of pearle. Item, I give to my very loving wyfe all her apparell, pearles, rings, and jewelles, which she now weareth, or hath in her possession : save only one chayne of dyamonds, which I lately bought by the help of one Mr Hardnett, a jeweller, and paid one hundred fifty-five pounds for the same, which is by her to be repayd to my executors within one yeare next after my decease ; unless my eldest sonne and she agree about the redemption of the manor of Rose Hall. Item, I give to my well-beloved wyfe my best coach and twoe of my best coach-horses, and she to dwell in my house in Dorset Court (in Fleet Street) soe longe as she remaynes my widdowe.”

In 1628 Suckling commenced his travels, being then in his twentieth year, though Aubrey, following his inaccurate chronology, makes him to have visited France, Italy, and Germany (and he thinks also Spain), by the time he was eighteen. These countries, we are told, he visited with advantage to himself; nor can it be questioned that his talents enabled him to study with correctness the picture of human nature under the influence of different religious and political creeds, though the assertion of his panegyrists, that “he made a collection of their virtues without any tincture of their vices and follies,” is unhappily contradicted by many extravagances and youthful indiscretions.

But his adventures in Germany furnish the most interesting incidents in his travels. This country was at that period rendered an object of universal attention in Europe by the extraordinary successes of Gustavus Adolphus, and became yet more strongly regarded in England in consequence of the misfortunes of the Prince Palatine of the Rhine, who had married the only sister of the British monarch.

A commission, after many delays, was granted by Charles to the Marquis of Hamilton to raise a body of six thousand men, to act with him as their general, under the King of Sweden, and in behalf of the Palatine.

These troops embarked at Yarmouth, and landed in Germany on the 31st of July 1631, with the loss of only two men. Suckling united himself to this expedition, being one of forty gentlemen's sons who served

about the Marquis's immediate person.<sup>1</sup> This body of auxiliaries, it is well known, was not suffered to remain inactive, and rendered very effectual service to Gustavus at the first defeat of Tilly before Leipsic, on the 7th of September following, a battle of great importance at that time, and obstinately contested. He was also present at the sieges of Crossen, Guben, Glogau, and Magdeburg, and obtained considerable military reputation for his conduct in several successive actions, fought during the inroads of Hamilton in the provinces of Lusatia and Silesia.

It is probable that he continued abroad in his military capacity till the return of Hamilton in September 1632. We cannot, however, follow him during this period of his life with the accuracy that might be desired; for, though several of his letters from abroad are remaining, they unfortunately bear no dates.<sup>2</sup>

On the conclusion of his campaigns he returned to England with the character of an accomplished gentleman, distinguished by polite learning, wit, and

---

<sup>1</sup> [There is a letter from Suckling to Sir Henry Vane, May 2, 1632, in which he gives many particulars of the war then going on, but does not enter into purely personal details. See it printed for the first time, from the original in the State Paper Office, among the Correspondence.]

<sup>2</sup> [The writer here inserted a letter written by Suckling about this time; but it is given in the Correspondence, and did not seem worth repeating. Mr Suckling was not aware that, in MS. Ashmole, 826, is a letter from Suckling to Will (Davenant?), dated 18th November 1629. See it printed, for the first time, among the Correspondence. It appears to have been really written at Dunkirk.]

gallantry. To a frankness of manners and a graceful person he united an easiness of carriage and an elegance of address so remarkable, as to draw forth the observation that “he had the peculiar happiness of making everything he did become him.”

“He was so famous at court,” says Sir William Davenant, “for his accomplishments and readie sparkling wit, that he was the bull that was bayted, his repartee and witt beinge most sparkling, when most set on and provoked.” But if we take a short retrospect of the national feelings and manners of that period, it will enable us to understand more clearly, how much a man of Suckling’s accomplishments must have been valued in a court like that of Charles I. ✓ The growing love of liberty, for which these times were now remarkable, was opposed by a spirit of devoted loyalty, as magnificent in its display as it was elevated in its principle. The severe and ascetic habits which the popular party combined with their democratic opinions served only to render them more hateful to the Cavaliers, by whom the refined amusements and gallantry of the court were pursued with a redoubled vivacity, which at once gratified party-spirit, and indulged that inclination to pleasure all find so imperious in its demands. Literature and the fine arts obtained an unprecedented encouragement from the king; and these, directed by his own acknowledged taste, and by that of the beautiful Henrietta Maria, rendered the court of England the most polished in Europe. “The pleasures of the court,” says Walpole, in his “Anecdotes of Painting,” “were

carried on with much taste and magnificence. Poetry, ✓ painting, music, and architecture were all called in to make them rational amusements. Ben Jonson was the laureate, Inigo Jones, the inventor of the decorations; Laniere and Ferabosco composed the symphonies; the king, the queen, and the young nobility, danced in the interludes."

In a state of refined society like this, the accomplishments of Suckling were eminently calculated to shine: gay, witty, generous, and gallant, he was considered, says Winstanley, "as the darling of the court." At his house at Whitton, entertainments similar to the court masques were introduced, on which his poetical talents and utmost efforts were exhausted to produce delight.

One of his magnificent assemblies, given in London, is noticed by a contemporary for its sumptuousness and eccentricity, and is said to have cost him an astonishing sum.<sup>1</sup> Every court lady who could boast of youth and beauty was present, his gallantry excluding those not so blessed. Yet so abundant were fair faces in that day, that the rooms were overflowing, as if Nature were resolute in producing objects of adoration in proportion as their votaries were numerous

---

<sup>1</sup> The words of my authority are, "hundreds of pounds," and if we consider the value of money in those days, a very large sum must have been thus expended. Suckling's profuseness towards the fair sex is also related in another place by the same writer: he mentions a countess "whom he had highly courted, and had spent on her, in treating her, some thousands of pounds." *Vide* Aubrey's "Sketches."

and devoted. These ladies Suckling entertained with every rarity which wealth could collect and taste prescribe. But the last course displayed his sprightly gallantry ; it consisted not of viands, yet more delicate and choice, but of silk stockings, garters, and gloves, presents at that time of no contemptible value.

Amidst scenes like these, we may suppose, were produced that variety of beautiful letters to the fair sex, in which he so much excelled.<sup>1</sup>

But with these amusements he unhappily combined pursuits of a more odious character. He became enamoured of play, and entered into habits of deep gaming with an eagerness unworthy of its cause. He distinguished himself in these, as in more defensible gratifications, and was soon known as the best bowler and card-player in the kingdom, to the neglect, probably, of worthier attainments. To his fondness for the former pursuit he alludes in his poem of “The Sessions of the Poets :”—

Suckling next was call'd, but did not appear,  
But straight one whisper'd Apollo i' th' ear,  
That of all men living he cared not for't,  
He loved not the Muses so well as his sport :

<sup>1</sup> [From passages in Suckling's correspondence it is to be gathered with tolerable ease and clearness that “Aglaura,” after whom he named one of his dramas, was a native of Anglesey, if not one of the daughters of Sir Richard Bulkeley, of Baron-Hill, Beaumaris. A search has been recently undertaken by the editor, with the kind help of Mr Richard Sims, among some of the MSS. at the British Museum, with a view to clearing up this point, but without success.]

And prized black eyes, or a lucky hit  
At bowls, above all the trophies of wit.

We are told that his sisters came one day to the Piccadilly bowling-green, “crying for the fear he should lose all their portions.”

As a card-player he was equally notorious, and became so enraptured with the fascinations of play, that he would frequently lie in bed the greater part of the day with a pack of cards before him, to obtain by practice the most perfect knowledge and management of their powers. In short, his notoriety became so remarkable, says Aubrey, “that no shopkeeper would trust him for sixpence ; as to-day, for instance, he might, by winning, be worth £200 ; the next day, he might not be worth half so much, or perhaps sometimes *minus nihil*.”<sup>1</sup>

But this picture is unquestionably overcharged, and must be regarded with caution, as sketched by one who has shown no tenderness in delineating his character, and who, in recording his vices, has made no mention of his sociable and amiable temper, his generous and friendly disposition ; and it is further

---

<sup>1</sup> [In a newsletter from George Garrard to Lady Conway, Sept. 18, 1635 (“Cal. of State Papers,” D. S., 1635, p. 385), it is said : “My Lady Duchess of Buckingham miscarried this summer. I heard her husband, my Lord Dunhill, lost at the Wells at Tunbridge about £2000 at ninepins, most of it to Sir John Sutlin.” See Spence’s “Anecdotes,” edit. 1858, pp. 2-4 : “The story of the French cards was told me by the late Duke of Buckingham, and he had it from old Lady Dorset herself.”—P.]

important, in estimating the true character of our poet, that no unworthy practices in pursuing this imprudent indulgence have ever been attached to his reputation. That he never seriously injured his fortune by it is certain, from the large sums of money he was afterwards enabled to expend on worthier and patriotic purposes.

Sir William Davenant's portrait of his friend and brother poet, while labouring under the influence of ill success, is worth recording, as characterising that elasticity of mind for which he was particularly distinguished. "On these occasions, when at his lowest ebb, he would make himself glorious in apparel, and said that it exalted his spirits, and that he had then the best luck, when he was most gallant, and his spirits high." A friendly reprehension of this vice drew from him a letter, in which he promises speedy amendment, wittily desires some other sin to be assigned him in its place, and insinuates that his attachment to it had arisen rather from a want of fitter employments than from a vicious inclination.<sup>1</sup>

Sir William Davenant tells us he would say that "he did not much care for a lord's converse, for that they were in those dayes damnably proud and arrogant, and the French would say that my Lord d'Angleterre look't comme un mastiff-dog." Notwithstanding this satire, we know he was sincerely attached to many of the nobility; and to the marriage of Lord Broghill, towards whom he was

---

<sup>1</sup> [See the Correspondence.]

closely drawn by the ties of friendship, we owe the production of one of the most beautiful ballads in our language.

The preceding recital of juvenile errors has been demanded by impartiality from the pen of biography; but it more gladly records that an earnestness of purpose, alike honourable and patriotic, marked the employment of Suckling's latter years. His most valued associates were now men dignified by their virtue and distinguished by their abilities. The amiable and virtuous Lord Falkland, and Roger Boyle, Lord Broghill—a man whose character, in both public and private life, approached the perfection of human nature<sup>1</sup>—were his most chosen companions; with whom Stanley, the learned editor of Æschylus, Davenant and Jonson, Shirley, Hall, and Nabbes—writers of no contemptible merit—shared his conversation and enjoyed his friendship.<sup>2</sup>

In this place may be mentioned a circumstance which is not only too singular in itself to pass unnoticed, but deserves recording as a triumph of Suckling's pen, which on the present occasion reclaimed a relative from the path of folly, and rendered him an

---

<sup>1</sup> *Vide* "Memoirs of Roger Boyle, Earl of Orrery," by the Rev. Thomas Morrice, folio, p. 49. The pen of Suckling has twice eulogised this nobleman; and Lord Falkland has received an elegant compliment from him in "The Sessions of the Poets."

<sup>2</sup> [In 1638 Nabbes dedicated to Suckling his play of "Covent Garden," and in 1639 Wye Salstonstall inscribed "To the right worshipful Sir John Suckling, Knight," his translation of Ovid's "De Ponto." See also Hazlitt's edit. of Carew, xliv.-vi.]

useful and respectable member of society. Charles Suckling, the youngest son of the poet's uncle, Charles Suckling, Esq. of Woodton, had for some years indulged in a strange propensity of paying attentions to very young women, whom he deserted as they became marriageable, when he transferred his love to fresh objects more juvenile who, in their turn, were in like manner discarded.

To wean his relative from this weak and dishonourable conduct, he tried, at his uncle's request, the effects of raillery and satire—engines of very formidable calibre, of which Suckling well knew the use. In his letter on this subject which he addressed to his cousin, he ridicules him as a “founder of a new sect of fools in the commonwealth of lovers,” compares his conduct to that of the jackanapes in the fable, who let out his partridges one by one, for the pleasure of staring after what was irrevocable, and with admirable sense reminds him that, while engaged in such senseless sport, the “*fugaces anni*” of life were fleeting at a rapid rate. “’Sfoot, it is the story of the jackanapes and the partridges! thou starest after a beauty till it is lost to thee, and then lettest out another, and starest after that till *it* is gone too, never considering that it is here, as in the Thames, and that while it runs up in the middle, it runs down on the sides: while thou contemplatest the coming-in tide and flow of beauty, that it ebbs with *thee*, and that youth goes out at the same time.”<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> [This letter of counsel is evidently referred to in “Aglaura,” iv. i. See the present volume, p. 154.]

It may be added that the wit and raillery of Suckling's remarks were well directed, as they effectually cured the trifler of his fickleness in affairs of the heart. By a reputable marriage with an amiable lady he became the father of four daughters, of whom Lucy Suckling, the eldest, by her union with John Knyvet, was ancestress of the present Baron Berners. But while Suckling was basking in the sunny regions of court popularity, distinguished as the favourite of his monarch, by whom he was now knighted, and just before his absolute devotion to literature and public affairs, a circumstance occurred of considerable importance to his reputation and happiness.

He had been for some time a captive to the personal charms of the daughter of Sir Henry Willoughby, a lady of great expectations, but unhappily possessed of a temper and disposition revengeful and coarse. The relation of this entanglement, and its unfortunate termination, are so pertinently narrated in the "Stratford State Papers,"<sup>1</sup> that it will be better to transcribe the words of the original writer, than mar them by using my own:—

"I come now (says Garrard) to a rodomontado of such a nature as is scarce credible. Sir John Sut-

---

<sup>1</sup> Vol. i. p. 336, folio edition, in Mr Garrard's letter to the Lord-Deputy, dated November 10th, 1634. [From a letter written by Ambrose Randolph to Jane, Lady Bacon (Corresp. 1842, p. 197), it might be concluded that this affray took place in 1626, and that the elder Suckling was the person implicated, not his son. But the letter is undated, and has been, no doubt, wrongly assigned to the earlier year.]

cling, a young man, son to him that was Comptroller, famous for nothing before, but that he was a great gamester, was a suitor to a daughter of Sir Henry Willoughby's, in Derbyshire, heir to a thousand a year. By some friend he had in court, he got the king<sup>1</sup> to write for him to Sir Henry Willoughby, by which means he hoped to get her ; for he thought he had interest enough in the affections of the young woman, so her father's consent could be got. He spoke somewhat boldly that way, which coming to her knowledge, she entreated a young gentleman, who also was her suitor, a brother of Sir Kenelm Digby's, to draw a paper in writing, which she dictated, and to get Sir John Sutclin's hand unto it. Therein he must disavow any interest he hath in her by promise or otherways. If he would undertake this, she said it was the readiest way he could use to express his affection to her. He willingly undertakes it ; gets another young man, a Digby, into his company, and having each of them a man, goes out upon this adventure, intending to come to London, where he thought to find him ; but meeting Suckling on the way, he saluted him, and asked him whither he was going ? He said, on the king's business, but would not tell

---

<sup>1</sup> [In a letter from Lord Keeper Coventry to Secretary Windenbank, Nov. 27, 1638, the projected marriage between Suckling and the daughter of Sir Henry is mentioned, and it is said to have been recommended to Suckling by the king two or three years prior. The Lord Keeper also adverts to the discredit which Willoughby had cast upon himself by his conduct in the transaction. "Cal. of State Papers," Dom. 1638-9, p. 126.]

him whither, though he pressed him if it were not to Sir Henry Willoughby's? He then drew forth his paper, and read it to him, and pressed him to under-write it: he would not, and with oaths confirms his denial. He told him he must force him to it: he answered nothing could force him. Then he asked him whether he had any such promise from her as he gave out? In that, he said, he would not satisfy him. Mr Digby then falls upon him with a cudgel which, being a yard long, he beat out upon him almost to a handful, he never offering to draw his sword: Sutlin's two men standing by and looking on. Then in comes Phillip Willoughby with his man, a proper gentleman, a man held stout, and of a very fair reputation, who was assistant to this Sutlin in all his wooing business. Mr Digby presseth him also to avow by word of mouth that Sutlin hath no such interest in his kinswoman as he pretendeth: He denies to do it: whereupon he struck him three or four blows on the face with his fist. They then cried out that they were the king's prisoners, and that they should have some other time to speak with them. This report comes quickly up to London. Sir Kenelm Digby comes to Hampton Court before the king came up: to his friends there he avows every particle of this business. Since, Sutlin and Willoughby are both in London; but they stir not. Also Sir Henry Willoughby and his daughter are come hither, Laurence Whitaker being sent by the king for them. One affront he did them more; for, finding them the next day after he had so used them in a great chamber of Sir Henry

Willoughby's, he asked the young gentlewoman what she did with such baffled fellows in her company? Incredible things to be suffered by flesh and blood; but that England is the land of peace."

The same authority thus continues on this subject: "Sir Henry Willoughby is come up with his daughter; she is placed with the Lady Paget the elder, in Westminster, her near kinswoman; and the whole business of discerning the young woman's affection is left to the discovery of my Lord of Holland and the Comptroller, Sir Henry Vane, who have been with her, and she will have none of Sutclin."

The grossness of this outrage, which must have caused considerable sensation at court, excited the indignation of the king, with whom Suckling was in high favour. By the royal command, Digby was compelled to make very abject submission, though the nature of his humiliation has not transpired. It is certain, however, that he speedily became disgusted with his conduct in the affair, and with her for whose sake he had thus degraded himself.

The carriage of Suckling, as a man of courage, has been questioned in consequence of this affray, and indeed it seems to require some exculpation. A mystery hangs over the whole affair, which is perhaps somewhat exaggerated; for it is related that "Phillip Willoughby, a proper gentleman, a man held stout, and of a very fair reputation," that is, a man of undoubted courage, received the fisticuffs of Digby with a tameness equal to that of his friend, and, like him, offered no retaliation. That Digby was desirous of

provoking Suckling to draw, relying on his own superiority in the use of his weapon, which would have afforded him a pretext for despatching his rival, appears evident. Indeed, it is almost certain that he presumed, like a bully, on his skill as a swordsman, and on the inequality of their physical powers; for we are told that “Digby was a proper person of great strength and courage answerable, and yielded to be the best swordsman of his time; and was such a hero, that there were very few, but he would have served in the same manner:” while “Sir John Suckling was but a slight-timbered man of middling stature.”

After this renounter, says Aubrey, “’twas strange to see the envie and ill-nature of people to trample and scoffe at and deject one in disgrace; inhumane, as well as unchristian.”

The kindness of Lady Moray, however, who entertained the highest regard for Suckling’s talents and worth, restored him to the good graces of the fashionable world. She had made an entertainment for a large party of the nobility at her seat at Ashley, near Chertsey, to which Sir John Suckling was invited. Amongst the company was a lady whom he had “highly courted, and had spent on her, in treating her, some thousands of pounds.” Aubrey calls her the Countess of Middlesex; but he is evidently mistaken, as that lady was Suckling’s aunt, and not likely to have been the object of his gallantry.<sup>1</sup> Not-

---

<sup>1</sup> [However, in a poetical satire by Henry Nevile, called “The Ladies’ Parliament,” without date, but printed about this time, we have—

withstanding his previous munificence, she could not forbear her railleries on his late encounter with Digby; and some other ladies, we are told, "had their flirts." Sir John, as may be imagined, felt much annoyed and dejected by their ridicule.

Lady Moray, seeing his uneasiness, exclaimed, "Well! I am a merrie wench, and will never forsake an old friend in disgrace: so, come and sitt downe by me, Sir John." Upon this, she seated him at her right hand, and paid him extraordinary attention. Her well-timed kindness raised his dejected spirits so greatly, "that he threw his repartees about the table with much sparkliness and gentileness of witt, to the admiration of them all." ✓

Suckling from this period devoted his talents to public business, and was much employed by his monarch, his practice on this occasion being in direct opposition to the principle which dictated his advice to another, "To persuade one that has newly shipwrecked to seek content among the disorders and troubles of a court, were, I think, a thing the king himself (and majesty is no ill orator) would find some difficulty to do." Sir John, however, now established his residence in the metropolis, which he rarely quitted, being, perhaps, as much attached by the means it afforded of indulging his taste for pleasure, as detained by the press of state affairs. But his

---

"Middlesex was melancholy,  
But repented of her folly;  
Suckling's death troubled her much,  
But since she hath had many a touch."] d

continued residence there at length subjected him to the penalties of the law. A proclamation had been issued in the eighth year of King Charles's reign, commanding the nobility and gentry to spend a portion of their time and revenue on their country estates. But this salutary provision had been greatly disregarded ; and as the evil still continued, it was thought requisite to take some summary steps for the enforcement of the statute.

Accordingly, in April 1635, an information was filed in the Court of Star Chamber<sup>1</sup> by Banks, the Attorney-General, against Sir John Suckling and others, "for that they holding, and having long held, places of employment under his majesty in several counties of the realm, ought not to desert their places and counties, whence their revenue ariseth ; and are fit and able to do his majesty and the realm several services in their countries ; and to continue to reside in London and Westminster : and the Attorney prayeth of his majesty, that he would issue a writ of subpoena that the delinquents may be called to answer for the offence at the Court of Star Chamber." It should be observed that this court was an engine of almost absolute authority, and its processes most alarming ;<sup>2</sup> but Suckling so greatly possessed the

---

<sup>1</sup> Rushworth's " Historical Collections," ii. 288.

<sup>2</sup> Sir George Markham was fined £10,000 in the Court of Star Chamber for striking Lord Darcy's huntsman, who had given him foul language. Morley was fined to the same amount for reviling, challenging, and striking, in the court of Whitehall, Sir G. Theobald, one of the king's servants. Alison and Robins,

favour of his sovereign, that he was speedily extricated from the dangers of his situation. He retired, however, without delay to his country seat, in obedience to the royal edict, and devoted himself almost exclusively to the charms of music and literature, till the increasing violence of faction again drew him into more active employment. In this interval were produced his best literary performances.

In the year 1637 was published<sup>1</sup> his “Sessions of the Poets”—a piece of entire originality, which has been imitated by numberless writers, and which is valuable as showing the soundness of Suckling’s criticisms. About the same time, also, appeared his admirable tract on Socinianism: this piece, which he calls “An Account of Religion by Reason,” though dated from Bath, was written, according to the testimony of “Parson Robert Davenant,”<sup>2</sup> “on his table in the parlour of the parsonage at West Kingston,” and occupied him but a few days. “It is a discourse,

---

who had reported that the Archbishop of York had requested a limited toleration for the Catholics were amerced each a thousand pounds, and sentenced to be committed to prison, to be bound for their good behaviour during life, to be whipped, and to be set on the pillory at Westminster, and in three other towns in England.—*Vide* Rushworth, ii. 269, 270; Clarendon, Lansdown, &c.

Numerous other instances of judgment, equally arbitrary and severe, might be adduced. [See Burn’s “Star Chamber,” 1870, p. 138 *et passim.*]

<sup>1</sup> [Not printed, but written and circulated in MS.]

<sup>2</sup> Parson Robert Davenant was the elder brother of Sir William Davenant, the poet laureate.

says an anonymous admirer of our poet, which for learning, closeness of reason, and elegance of style, may put to shame the writings of men of far greater pretensions on like subjects." Suckling's expensive style of living is illustrated by Davenant's account of their expedition to Bath, to which place he at this time accompanied him :—"Sir John came like a young prince for all manner of equipage and convenience, and had a cart-load of books carried down." The last is a pleasing touch in this lively sketch, as it shows that the love of pleasure and expense in which he so greatly indulged was balanced by an equal ardour for literary enjoyments and rational pursuits.<sup>1</sup>

\* In 1638 he published his "Aglaura." As this play was printed in folio, with wide margins and a narrow streamlet of type—a fashion then uncommon, if not altogether new—a writer in the "Musarum Deliciae"<sup>2</sup> ridiculed it as ostentatious, and wittily resembled it to a baby lodged in the great bed at Ware, or to a small picture in a large frame. The piece was, notwithstanding these criticisms, much admired, and obtained for the author a poetical com-

---

<sup>1</sup> [In a letter of Jan. 21, 1638-9, written from Wrest by Mrs Merrick to a friend, the writer expresses a great wish to be in town, in order to witness a revival of Jonson's "Alchemist," and the new play which had been revised for the author by Suckling and Carew; but to make up for this she proposes to fall back on Shakespeare and the "History of Women"—probably Heywood's. "Cal. of State Papers," Dom. 1638-9, p. 342.]

<sup>2</sup> [Edit. 1817, i. 52.]

pliment, published in "Witts Recreations."<sup>1</sup> It is said to have been the first play acted in this kingdom with scenes ; such decorations having been previously confined to the celebration of masques. So greatly was its author determined on bringing out this piece with splendour, that the stage expenses were all voluntarily borne by himself. He bought all the dresses, which were composed of the most costly materials, the lace embroidered upon them being of pure gold and silver.

~~X~~ Three prologues are prefixed to this play : one addressed generally to the audience ; a second to the court ; and the last to the king. From this circumstance, and the known partiality of Charles for Sir John Suckling, it seems almost certain that their Majesties honoured the first representation of "Aglaura" by their presence. The expenses incurred by the author on its production cannot reasonably be referred to any ordinary occasion. In the king's prologue Suckling has played the courtier

~~X~~ <sup>1</sup> If learning will beseem a courtier well,  
If honour waite on those who dare excell ;  
Then let not poets envy, but admire  
The eager flames of thy poetic fire ;  
For, whilst the world loves wit, Aglaura shall,  
Phœnix-like, live after her funeral.

—*Witt's Recreations.* 1641.

And in the satirical letter by William Norris, 1641, a further mention is made of this play. Though the author of that tract did not intend to compliment Suckling on his performance, the allusion evidently shows that "Aglaura" was highly esteemed. [See the Appendix.]

with success in a well-turned compliment to the taste of Charles and his queen, which has this additional merit, that it was deserved :—

“ Your power is here more great  
And absolute, than in the royal seat.  
There men dispute, and, but by laws obey ;  
Here is no law at all, but what ye say.”<sup>1</sup>

The power of gratifying these elegant, yet expensive amusements, proves Aubrey's observations on his financial reputation to have been overstrained—the result probably of false information or malevolence—and his subsequent munificence to his prince will show unequivocally that he had never felt real pecuniary inconvenience up to that moment. But these golden days of literary success and felicity were not altogether unalloyed by a mixture of those discomforts which embitter our sojourn here. An unhappy domestic occurrence excited a temporary gloom in our poet's family. His eldest sister, Martha, had married Sir George Southcott, of Shillingford, in the county of Devon, who completed a course of conjugal unkindness by the appalling crime of suicide. This melancholy event drew from Suckling an admirable consolatory letter, the manly style and sentiments of which are worthy of his pen.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> [It does not appear to have been noticed that Suckling had a perilous adventure in returning from the performance of “Aglaura” at the Blackfriars theatre, and was stabbed with a rapier, which, however, did not succeed in penetrating the armour (or more probably quilted doublet) which the poet wore. See “Four Fugitives Meeting,” in Appendix, p. 272.]

<sup>2</sup> [Printed in the Correspondence, letter v.]

Lady Southcott was Sir John's favourite sister ; she had a house in Bishopsgate Street, which was much frequented by him, and where Aubrey had seen his portrait, which he describes as a fine full length, painted by Vandyke, and considered to be of great value.<sup>1</sup> Lady Southcott afterwards married William Clagett, Esq. of Isleworth, and died at Bath in 1661.

But the increasing violence of faction, and the wild

---

<sup>1</sup> This very fine performance is now at Hartwell, near Aylesbury [the residence of the late Dr Lee]. It measures seven feet and half an inch, by four feet two inches and three quarters. The poet is represented standing, and leaning on a rock with his left arm. On the rock is engraved, *Ne te quæsiveris extra*. The hair is flowing and red : he is dressed in a blue jacket, over which is a scarlet mantle, fastened on the right shoulder by a golden button : on his legs appear buff leather boots, those indispensable accompaniments of a well-dressed gentleman of his day, and to which fashion he alludes in his prologue to the "Goblins :"—

" You're grown to that,  
You will not like the man, unless his boots and hat  
Be right."

He holds a folio book of poetry in his left hand, and a few of its leaves with his right. On the edge of the book is a paper, on which is written *Shakespeare*. The possession of the picture is thus traced to its present owner—Sir Thomas Lee, Baronet, of Hartwell, ancestor of Dr Lee, married Ann Davis, daughter and heiress of Sir John Davis of Pangbourne, by Ann Suckling, sister to Sir John. As Lady Southcott died without issue, after the decease of the poet, her niece without doubt inherited the bulk of her property, and this picture with the rest of her personal possessions. The estimation in which Vandyke's works were held in his own day is evident from the following extract from a letter of Suckling's. " And for Mistress Delana's, we do not despair but Vandyke may be able to copy it ; threescore pounds we have offered, and I think fourscore will tempt him."

clamours of the Scotch for a liberty of conscience, which they considered as shackled by the promulgation of a national liturgy, broke in at length upon the quiet enjoyments of our poet, and disturbed the peaceful splendours of the court.

Suckling had published, it is supposed, in 1639, but without date, his tragedy of "Brennoralt," under the title of the "Discontented Colonel;" it was intended as a satire on the rebels, under the name of Lithuanians. But his efforts on behalf of his monarch were not confined to his pen. The Scottish League and Covenant having ended in open rebellion, he resolved on more active assistance. Though Charles was averse to violent and sanguinary measures, the enthusiasm of the malcontents compelled him to draw together an army for the prevention of total disorder in his government, to the support of which his revenues were altogether inadequate. On this occasion, when national supplies were refused, Suckling stood forward with alacrity to show his countrymen the duties of loyalty at such a crisis, and with a liberality which has never been surpassed, and perhaps rarely paralleled, presented his majesty with a troop of one hundred horsemen, whom he clothed and maintained from his private resources.<sup>1</sup> The uniform adopted

---

<sup>1</sup> [The earliest news of these famous "hundred horse" of Suckling's appears to be in a letter of Jan. 29, 1638-9, from the Earl of Northumberland to Lord Conway, in which the writer speaks of Suckling having then engaged himself to the king to raise the troop "within these three days." "Cal. of State Papers," Dom., 1638-9, p. 378.]

for this body of men was, white doublets, with scarlet coats, breeches, and hats, while a feather of the same colour, attached to each man's bonnet, completed his attire. As they had been selected with great attention to vigour and manly appearance, and were well mounted and armed, this troop was considered as the "finest sight" in his majesty's army. The organising this body is said to have cost Sir John Suckling above twelve thousand pounds ; but surely this sum, which appears enormous for that period, must have included the pay and maintenance of the men and horses during the entire term of their service.<sup>1</sup>

With this reinforcement he joined the king's army

---

<sup>1</sup> Our poet's uncle, Charles Suckling, Esq. of Woodton, seems to have possessed a less enthusiastic loyalty. His manor of Barsham, in Suffolk, had been charged £17, 3s. 10d. towards the support of a ship of 800 tons, manned with 320 seamen. On the 6th of May 1640, the following cautious answer was returned to the Commissioners for levying this tax, instead of the sum charged. "Charles Suckling, Esq., his answer is, that he doe not refuse to paye, but he have no munny." Indeed, the returns of the whole hundred of Wangford, in which this parish is situated, are much in the same strain, and form a very curious document, which is to be seen among the MSS. in the British Museum. £1, 6s. 2d. only was ultimately raised in Barsham. The remonstrances of the inhabitants of Bungay remind us very forcibly of the complaints of more recent days. They beg to be exempted from the charge made upon them, as "trading is soe deade, and chese, butter, corne, and all other ther commodityties doe yield soe little price, as that they are not able to live, and pay ther rents." Others say, "that in tradinge, times are soe hard, that they can skerslie mayntayne there charge and famylie ;" while, with modern effrontery, "others give no answer, and are not to be spoken with."

on its march to the north, which is said to have resembled a triumphal procession rather than a military expedition. Charles, with a vacillation unworthy of his station and courage, still fostered doubts and perplexity, and seemed willing by ample concessions to prevent the effusion of his subject's blood. That the expedition would terminate by bloodless compromise seemed a prevalent idea, and Suckling expresses the same opinion in a letter to a friend written from the banks of the Trent.<sup>1</sup>

On the 29th of May 1639, as these treaties had proved abortive, Charles's army arrived at Berwick, carrying with it, says Lord Clarendon, more show than real force. The advantage, in a military point of view, was evidently in favour of the Scots; for though the English army is allowed to have been more numerous, and superior in cavalry, yet the Earl of Arundel, to whose command it was entrusted, was distinguished by neither military nor political abilities. The Scots, on the other hand, though less disciplined and worse armed, were animated to enthusiasm by the most powerful of all excitements, religious fervour and national antipathy. They were commanded, too, by officers of acknowledged reputation and considerable military experience, of whom the celebrated Lesly was appointed general. The idle clamour of these malcontents for a liberty of conscience which they already enjoyed, and the pretence to sanctity assumed by their designing leaders,

---

<sup>1</sup> [Printed in the Correspondence.]

are noticed by Suckling, who appears to have watched the progress of this momentous business with foresight and penetration [in his letter to a friend about the Scottish business, printed elsewhere.]

But while the king continued perplexed by doubts, and distressed by mistakes, his army came within sight of the Scots at Dunse. The command of the cavalry had been entrusted to Lord Holland, a nobleman described by Sir Philip Warwick as “fitter for a show than a field.” But to this character of military incapacity has been added by some the charge of treachery. Certain, however, it is, that he disgraced the king’s troops by ordering a retreat without striking a blow; or, as some have asserted, without having even seen the enemy. It is well known that the whole English army fled. Sir John Mennis who, as a contemporary poet, was probably jealous of Suckling’s popularity and literary merit, and who has shown himself inimical to him on other occasions, has thrown a stigma on Suckling’s military character for this misconduct of his commander. He has lampooned him and his troop in a well-known ballad,<sup>1</sup> the humour of which has probably prevented a fair inquiry into the justice of its satire. Yet it must be allowed that no greater disgrace attached itself to Sir John’s regiment than to the other troops, and that the playful exaggerations of Mennis’s muse have alone rendered

---

<sup>1</sup> [“Facetiae ; Musarum Deliciae,” &c., 1817, ii. 81–83. This is to the tune of “John Dory,” which is found in the “Weakest goeth to the Wall,” 1600, i. 2.]

our poet conspicuous in this affair.<sup>1</sup> But this want of conduct was not confined to the English cavalry, the whole army labouring under a like imputation ; for Clarendon expressly states that, at the battle of Newburn, “the Scots put our *whole* army to the most shameful and confounding flight that was ever heard of, our foot making no less haste from New-Castle than our horse from Newburn.”<sup>2</sup>

Had Suckling and his troop individually disgraced themselves, they would without doubt have been rendered amenable to martial law ; but we find him retaining his monarch’s favour after this affair, and continuing with the army till a negotiation was concluded with the Scots, when this campaign, which was commenced in expensive preparations, ended in bloodless treaties.<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The power of satire and of poetry is remarkably exhibited in this case : the retreat of Dunse is better remembered in consequence of this ballad than from the relation of the historian. The song was anxiously sought after by the Parliamentarians, who sang on all occasions a banter on one who was a decided and vigilant opponent of their insidious designs. Had Suckling been a character less obnoxious to the malcontents, the merit of the poem had hardly preserved its fame. [In MS. Ashmole 36, fol. 54, is an ignorant transcript of some verses, entitled “Sir John Sucklings Answears.” These lines, with certain necessary corrections, are inserted among the Poems ; but it is very doubtful, on the whole, whether they were really from Suckling’s pen.]

<sup>2</sup> [In “Various Pieces of Fugitive Scotish Poetry,” Second Series, 1853, edited by Mr David Laing, is a curious poem on the battle of Newburn ; but there is no particular reference to Suckling and his troop.

<sup>3</sup> [See further in the Correspondence, pp. 219, &c.]

In the June following these events, the king's army was disbanded, and with it, of course, Sir John Suckling's troop ; nor does it appear that he attached himself to the military preparations made in the subsequent season. But these treaties were productive of no lasting tranquillity : the difficulties of royalty had now become so urgent, that Charles was reluctantly compelled once more to lay his affairs before an English parliament, which he accordingly summoned to assemble in April 1640. It was in vain, however, that the king represented to the members the urgent demands of his military preparations, which the discontents of Scotland had compelled him again to encounter ; in vain did he show this assembly that, although his treasury was exhausted, his own extravagances or unnecessary gratifications had not effected this inconvenience ; that the assistance he required was to prevent the total disarrangement of national tranquillity, and that he expected such a supply only as was necessary for the current service. These reasonable representations made no impression on men, the majority of whom had sagacity to perceive that royal authority would shortly become subservient to popular assemblies, and who disloyally desired it. Every effort was therefore used to drive the king once more to violent and unconstitutional measures, with a view to undermine his remaining popularity, and finally to procure the extinction of his power. The parliament, thus refractory, was suddenly dissolved, and the king's necessities supplied from the bounty of the Cavaliers, by whom he was so greatly beloved,

that above £300,000 were subscribed in a few days.

By these and similar expedients the king raised an army of about 21,000 men, whom the Scots again quickly dispersed. This was a situation still more deplorable for monarchy ! Without resources to supply his state necessities, and overwhelmed by petitions and addresses from the citizens of London, who loudly demanded a new parliament, Charles at length complied with their desires, and the Commons were summoned to meet again on the 3d of November 1640. This was the assembly which afterwards obtained the name of the Long Parliament, and Sir John Suckling was returned as member for Bramber. His talents for public business were admirably adapted to this situation.

With the utmost anxiety he had long watched the alarming and increasing dissensions between the king and his parliaments, and now addressed a letter on that pressing and important subject to his friend Henry Jermyn who, with better fortune than our poet, survived the usurpation of Cromwell, and was rewarded for his services with the earldom of St Alban's.

This admirable composition is well known to every one conversant with English history ; its maxims of sound policy, its correct judgment and acute foresight, would not disgrace the most refined and experienced politician.<sup>1</sup> In this letter Suckling displays a strong

<sup>1</sup> [See it in the present volume, p. 227, printed, with a few corrections, from the original 4<sup>o</sup> edition of 1641 ; the text given in the "Fragmenta" varies, and some passages are omitted.]

inclination to heal the wounds which party rancour had inflamed between the king and his people ; his allusions to the influence and conduct of the queen are beautifully expressed, and he points with delicacy to the necessity of her dismissing the Roman Catholic attendants by whom she was surrounded, and to whom was applied by the fanatics the origin of the existing evils. Though deplored the injustice, he admits the necessity of removing Laud and Strafford from the king's councils, as the only means of obtaining the services of the other ministers of state, and of allaying the public ferment.

It has been supposed that, as this letter was addressed to one of the king's most confidential servants, it was intended for the royal perusal. That his majesty did read it, and dwelt with consideration on its important arguments, seems almost beyond a doubt, as the subsequent conduct of Charles was perfectly in unison with the advice it contains.

On the fifth of May 1641, a Committee of the House of Commons was formed to adjust certain causes of disagreement between Sir John Suckling and Captain Bulmer.<sup>1</sup> In what these differences consisted, I know not ; as circumstances of a much more

---

<sup>1</sup> Captain Bulmer was probably a cadet of the ancient family of the Bulmers of the north ; he appears, however, to have been a charlatan of no ordinary character. In the collection of pamphlets presented to the British Museum by George III., is an advertisement of his, printed in 1647, entitled, "The Proposition of Captaine John Bulmer, remaining upon record in the office of Assurance, London, for the blowing of a boate, with a man or boy in her, over London bridge in safety."

important nature, which were brought to light on the evening of this day, annulled the prosecution of the inquiry. But it will be requisite to take a brief retrospect, to render this discovery perfectly intelligible.

The first steps of the Long Parliament had proved decidedly to Suckling that its leading principle was the gratification of party malice. Though he had admitted in his letter to Jermyn the propriety of dismissing Strafford from the king's counsels to allay the public ferment, he had never contemplated the atrocity of the designs which were now openly avowed against him. The impeachment of that nobleman, on the 22d of March 1640-41, had met his strenuous opposition ; and when he became convinced that the efforts of himself and his party were vainly united to the eloquence and integrity of that truly great man, and that nothing could wrest him from the malevolence of faction, he had ardently joined with a few friends in a plan to rescue him from the Tower. It will be needless to remind the most superficial reader of English history that this plot was disconcerted, and that the designs of the "Straffordians" proved ineffectual : the discovery of their attempt, as related by Whitelock, is perhaps less generally known. "The design," says he, "for the Earl of Strafford's escape out of the Tower was related to be discovered by three women who, peeping and hearkening to the discourse of the earl with Captain Billingsley, they, at the key-hole of the gallery door, heard them confer about the falling down of the ship to take in the earl ; and Billingsley brought a warrant from the king with two

hundred men, to be received into the Tower for the safety of it ; but Sir William Balfour, the lieutenant, refused to admit them, suspecting they came to further the earl's escape. Balfour confessed that two thousand pounds were offered him to consent to the earl's escape ; and the earl himself did not deny a design, which he said was only to remove him to some other castle. But Balfour was true to the interests of his countrymen, the Covenanters, and their friends in parliament."

Milton goes further than Whitelock, and openly accuses the king of being a partner in this scheme, "expressly commanding the admittance of new soldiers into the Tower, raised by Suckling and other conspirators."<sup>1</sup> X

But these active measures of Sir John Suckling and his friends could not long proceed unnoticed by the popular party, who had now obtained complete mastery in the parliament. Accordingly, on the 5th of the following May, the day appointed to decide the dispute between him and Captain Bulmer, an important discovery was made of a conspiracy (as it was termed by the Puritans) then in agitation against the whole kingdom.<sup>2</sup> The conspirators had made arrangements, it was said, for bringing over a French army to co-operate with the Irish troops and the loyalists of the English nation.

The junction of these formidable forces was fixed

---

<sup>1</sup> Milton's "Prose Works," folio edition, 1738, p. 391.

<sup>2</sup> "Parliamentary Proceedings," vol. i. anno 1641.

for the 22d of the same month, and one thousand four hundred barrels of gunpowder, it was further stated, had been prepared, and "were already loaden," for the purpose of conveyance to the place of rendezvous by the contrivers of this scheme.

The House immediately issued orders that further inquiries should be made into the particulars of this alarming enterprise, and summoned Mr Henry Percy, Colonel Goring, Mr Henry Jermyn, Sir John Suckling, and others, to attend the next day at three o'clock in the afternoon, to be examined as principals in the desperate plot.<sup>1</sup>

Suckling and his coadjutors, too well aware of their danger, absented themselves from the House, and were in consequence charged with high treason. This was on the 6th of May; on the 8th a proclamation was issued threatening them with the pains and penalties of their situation, unless they immediately surrendered themselves for examination; but Suckling was already beyond the seas, and his friends in concealment. The proclamation ran as follows:—

"Whereas, Henry Percy, Esq., Henry Jermyn, Esq., Sir John Suckling, Knight, William D'Avenant,

---

<sup>1</sup> [A copious account of this alleged conspiracy, with the examinations of Goring and others, will be found in Husbands' "Collection," 4<sup>o</sup>, 1643, pp. 215-34. There is a good deal about Suckling himself in the depositions of James Wadsworth and John Lanyon, some of the particulars of which are curious in themselves, on account of the mention of Suckling's lodgings in Covent Garden, a proposed rendezvous at the Sparagus Garden, &c.]

and Captain Billingsley, being by order of the Lords in Parliament, to be examined concerning designs of great danger to the state, and mischievous ways to prevent the happy success and conclusion of this Parliament; have so absented and withdrawn themselves, as they cannot be examined; his Majesty, by the advice of the said Lords in Parliament, doth strictly charge and command the said Henry Percy, H. Jermyn, Sir John Suckling, William D'Avenant, and Captain Billingsley, to appear before the Lords in Parliament at Westminster, within ten days after the date hereof, upon pain to incur and undergo such forfeitures and punishments as the said Lords shall order and inflict upon them. Given at his Majesty's Court at Whitehall, the eighth day of May, in the seventeenth year of his reign."<sup>1</sup>

The discovery of this affair was made by Goring, with an apostacy which casuistry can defend but imperfectly in a much worse cause. He acquainted the leaders of the popular party with the secrets of his confederates, and magnified the dangers of a design which, from its difficulties, had been abandoned two months before.

This base conduct saved Goring, at the expense of worthier men. Percy had absconded, and with good fortune eluded the vigilance of his pursuers; though, tiring of his concealment, he soon after wrote to his brother, the Earl of Northumberland, confessing the particulars of the plot, yet manfully exonerating the

---

<sup>1</sup> Rymer's "Fœdera," xx. 461, folio edition.

king, who had been insidiously charged with abetting their schemes, from any participation in their designs. In his letter, which may be seen at large in the "Parliamentary Proceedings," he says, "Their intention was neither to infringe the liberties of the subject nor destroy the laws." "This relation I sent you," he adds, "rather to inform you of the truth of the matter, that you may the better know how to do me good; but I should think myself very unhappy to be made a betrayer of any body. What concerned the Tower, or anything else, I never meddled withall; nor ever spake with Goring but that night before them all, and I said nothing but what was consented unto by any party. I never spoke one word with Suckling, Car-narvan, Davenant, or any other creature." "Methinks if my friends and kindred knew the truth and justice of the matter, it were no hard matter to serve me in some measure."

Goring stated in his examination before the House, which took place shortly after this confession of Percy, "that the Lieutenant (of the Tower) was to have £2000 for the Earl of Strafford's escape, and to marry his sonne to the Earl of Strafford's daughter; to go over into Ireland, and send the army hither, and so to go over into France; to possesse the English army with an ill opinion of the Parliament, and to make them advance to London; to deliver up Portsmouth in Master Jermine's hands, to be a rendezvous for the French and papists, and the bishops to raise one thousand horse for that purpose."

Captain Billingsley, who had not the good fortune

to escape, confessed on his examination, which was read to the members by the celebrated Hampden, "that Sir John Suckling invited him to the employment"—a mean evasion disproved by Percy. The Lieutenant of the Tower, whose evidence it was also thought necessary to obtain, endeavoured to confirm the previous statement of Goring, and magnified his own claims to fidelity by asserting that even so large a sum as £22,000 had been tendered for the earl's escape, which he had had the magnanimity to refuse.

Of the other loyalists concerned in this affair, it appears that Davenant was "taken at Faversham in Kent, was brought in a paire of oares to the House, and from thence committed to the Serjeant-at-arms." He was liberated, however, on bail, but endeavouring a second time to escape, was again seized, nor does it appear how his liberation was this time effected.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Sir John Mennis, whose acrimonious attack on the loyalty of Suckling has been noticed in a previous page, seems to have considered the flight and seizure of Davenant a fit subject for further satire. His misfortune forms an episode in a poetical epistle addressed "To a Friend on his Marriage":—

" You heard of late what Cavaliers  
(Who durst not tarry for their eares)  
Proscribed were—for such a plot  
As might have ruin'd heaven knows what :  
Suspected for the same's Will D'Avenant—  
Whether he have been in't, or have not,  
He is committed ; and, like sloven,  
Lolls on his bed, in Garden Coven ;  
He had been racked, as I am told,  
But that his body would not hold.

Jermyn and Sir John Suckling had fled with precipitation to the Continent, convinced that the court, which had shown its inability to protect Strafford, was consequently unable to shield his adherents.

The active life of our poet was now drawing rapidly towards its closing scene. Time, as it rolled in its unceasing course, brought no prospect of a national reunion, while the interdict against his safety continued in full validity. Reduced, at length, in fortune, and dreading to encounter poverty, which his habits and temper were little calculated to endure—hurled from his rank in society—an alien, and perhaps friendless—his energies at length gave way to the complicated wretchedness of his situation, and he contemplated an act which he had himself condemned in others.

Purchasing poison of an apothecary at Paris, he produced death, says Aubrey, by violent fits of vomiting. Some writers, with great tenderness to his

---

Soon as in Kent they saw the bard,  
(And to say truth it is not hard,  
For Will has in his face the flaws  
Of wounds received in's country's cause)  
They flew on him, like lions passant,  
And tore his nose, as much as was on't,  
They called him superstitious groom,  
And Popish dog—and curre of Rome—  
But this I'me sure was the first time,  
That Will's religion was his crime.  
Whitere he is in's outward part,  
He's sure a poet in his heart—  
But 'tis enough—he is thy friend,  
And so am I—and there's an end.

—“Musarum Deliciae,” 8°, 1655. [Edit. 1817, ii. 11-13.]

character, have attributed his end to other causes and dissimilar means ; but, I regret to add, family tradition confirms the first and most revolting narration.

The precise period of his death is uncertain, nor is the obscurity in which it remains enveloped likely to be removed. Aubrey states that he was buried in the cemetery attached to the Protestant Church at Paris ; but the destruction of all public records, at the time of the great revolution in France, renders investigation on this point fruitless.

It is certain, however, that he was dead before the expiration of the year 1642, or contemporary writers would not have assigned to his ghost the office of bringing remonstrances to the English nation from the infernal regions.<sup>1</sup>

If this chronology be accurate, Sir John Suckling died in his thirty-fourth year ; “in which short space,” says a compiler of a small edition of his works, “he had done enough to procure him the love and esteem of all the politest men who had conversed with him.”

His death, as before observed, has been ascribed by some writers, not acquainted with, or unwilling to state, the secret cause of his dissolution, to a fever produced by the calamitous aspect of national affairs ;

---

<sup>1</sup> [The latest tracts in which Suckling was mentioned are the “Elegy” upon him, 1642, printed in the Appendix, and “A Remonstrance of the State of the Kingdom,” 1642, in which there are several references to the political movements of his friends and himself.]

and at Knowle House in Kent, long the seat of his relatives the Dorsets, is a portrait of him, to which is attached, in a printed volume devoted to the curiosities of that noble mansion, a tale of marvellous horror and romance. Having been robbed, says this narrative, by his valet, that treacherous domestic, on finding his offence discovered, placed an open razor in his master's boot; and the latter, by drawing it hastily on, divided an artery, which caused his death through loss of blood.<sup>1</sup> Others attribute this catastrophe to a nail driven into the boot by the valet, with the same intention. This is said to have happened on his arrival at Calais, after his flight from London; and that Sir John, regardless of the pain and danger of the wound, pursued the miscreant, and overtook him. There may, perhaps, be some foundation for this story; but the horrid plan was certainly not the cause of his death.

Dreadful as is the contemplation of such atrocity, it would still be less appalling to moral feeling, had either of these narrations been correct; but truth inflicts the painful task on his biographer to deny their authenticity, and close the last page of his history with the relation of an act at once the most grievous and indefensible.

Thus perished immaturely, and in a land of strangers, the accomplished subject of this memoir;

---

<sup>1</sup> This is copied from Oldys, who, however, only mentions a penknife. That writer adds that the valet also administered poison to his master. [See further in Spence's "Anecdotes," 1858, p. 3; and *Notes and Queries*, Second Series, i. 172, 316.]

marked indeed by early levity and indiscretions, but happily more distinguished by devoted loyalty and intellectual refinement. If he be charged with want of prudence in the direction of his great abilities to his own advancement, they were at least ever exerted in favour of the learned and the deserving. If his earlier years were stained by habits of intemperance and frivolity, he has amply redeemed himself by the exertions of his maturer age. To a kind and amiable temper he united a generous and a friendly disposition; while the proofs of his patriotism and loyalty have been so fully developed in the progress of this essay, that, with all his imperfections, he is entitled to rank with the most distinguished characters of his day.

In person he was of the middle size, though but slightly made, with a winning and graceful carriage, and noble features. From Aubrey we have his picture touched with all the vigour of an original portrait. "Sir John Suckling was of middle stature and slight strength; brisque round eie, reddish fac't, and red nosed (ill liver); his head not very big; his hayre a kind of sand colour; his beard turn'd up naturally, so that he had a brisk and gracefull looke."

The pencil of Vandyke is said to have produced three portraits of this gentleman; one of which, a noble and masterly performance in the writer's possession, has been engraved for this work. A second, the fine full-length, formerly the property of the poet's sister, Lady Southcott, has been noticed in a preceding page. Of the third picture the history is

somewhat obscure. For many years a portrait has been shown at Hampton Court as that of the poet Suckling, and ascribed to the talent of Vandyke. It has, however, been discovered to be, in reality, the work of Hanneman, and to represent Peter Oliver the painter. The genuine painting is therefore to be sought elsewhere.<sup>1</sup> There is also a portrait of Suckling in the Ashmolean Library at Oxford; whether an original or not, is uncertain.<sup>2</sup>

Sir John Suckling died unmarried.

The talents and satire, which he had always exercised without restraint against puritanism and faction, had rendered Suckling peculiarly odious to the Parliamentarians. The lampoon of Sir John Mennis, on his "most warlike preparations for the Scottish warre," became with them a favourite song; and a ballad, arranged in a similar metre, made its appearance very shortly after his flight, entitled, "A letter sent by Sir John Suckling from France, deploring his sad estate and flight, with a discoverie of the plot and conspiracie intended by him and his adherents against England." This, [which is supposed to have been written by one William Norris,<sup>3</sup>] was printed in London, though

<sup>1</sup> The cicerones of the place must surely have confounded the poet with his father. The portrait in question bears no resemblance to the features of the former, but is somewhat, in its general character, like the elder knight. In the collection of family pictures at Woodton is a portrait of the father in his Privy Councillor's robes, painted by Cornelius Jansen, in his very best style.

<sup>2</sup> [An engraving of it accompanies the present edition.]

<sup>3</sup> [Notes and Queries, Second Series, xi. 204.]

dated from Paris, June 16th 1641, and recites with burlesque gravity the principal events of our poet's life.<sup>1</sup> It had proved far more valuable at the present day had it thrown any light on Suckling's closing scenes.

A pamphlet in prose was also printed in 1641, called "Newes from Sir John Sucklin, being a relation of his conversion from a papist to a protestant, &c."<sup>2</sup> This, which is altogether a fictitious performance of the Puritans, charges him with having lived as a "Romanist, and a treacherous and disloyal subject." This accusation probably arose from the tender manner in which he had alluded to the conduct of the queen and her Catholic attendants in his letter to Jermyn. It affords, however, one gleam more of Suckling's setting sun, as it states incidentally that he continued some time at Rouen after his flight to France, previously to his proceeding to Paris.

But puritanical malignity was not yet exhausted : a large folio sheet was printed, in the centre of which an engraving represents two Cavaliers in the splendid dress and flowing hair so offensive to the Roundheads : they are surrounded with dice and drinking-cups, as emblems of debauchery and profusion ; while the paper, which is closely printed, condemns in strong language, interlarded with an abundance of scriptural illustrations and texts, all evil practices and conversation.

---

<sup>1</sup> [See it in the Appendix.]

<sup>2</sup> [Also included in the Appendix.]

This curious production—which is launched against the *levities* of Suckling's youthful days—is entitled, “*The Sucklington Faction, or Suckling's Roaring Boyes.*”<sup>1</sup> In 1642, and immediately after Sir John's death, was published a fourth performance, termed, “A copy of two remonstrances brought over the river Stix in Caron's ferry-boate, by the ghost of Sir John Suckling.”<sup>2</sup>

These are strong testimonies of the importance attached to the political talents and sagacity of Suckling; for, had he not rendered himself an object of admiration to his friends, and of detestation to his opponents, his name had ceased to interest with the close of his life.

As a writer, Sir John Suckling will command admiration, so long as a taste for whatever is delicate and natural in poetry shall remain. His works are the production of a genius truly poetic and original: his language is animated and forcible; his versification, for the age, smooth and flowing; the structure of his stanzas is simple, and occasionally novel, being founded apparently in some instances on Italian models. In descriptions of feminine grace and beauty he is peculiarly happy, and in his prose compositions is clear, nervous, and sparkling.

If we bring his poems to the test of comparison with succeeding writers, notwithstanding the continued progress of elegant literature since his day, the

<sup>1</sup> [Inserted in the Appendix.]

<sup>2</sup> [This did not seem worth a place in the Appendix.]

result will prove that in the higher species of poetry he remains unrivalled.<sup>1</sup> Had his name been unknown in any other department of literature, or unconnected with any historical associations, his ballads and songs alone would render his fame imperishable. In applying metaphysics to poetry, a style of writing very fashionable in his day, but to which he has rarely, though occasionally, stooped, he has employed his conceptions with considerable ingenuity, nor has he allowed his ideas to overstep the limits of propriety. In the following stanza, taken from his "Love's World," these remarks will be found, I think, to apply with justness; nor can very strong objections be made to the comparisons employed in the remaining verses—

"The sea's my mind, which calm would be,  
Were it from winds, my passions, free ;

V<sup>1</sup> [In Spence's "Anecdotes," it is said: "Considering the manner of writing then in fashion, the purity of Sir John Suckling's style is quite surprising." Hazlitt observes: "Sir John Suckling is one of the most piquant and attractive of the minor poets. He has fancy, wit, humour, descriptive talent, the highest elegance, perfect ease, a familiar style, and a pleasing versification. He has combined these in his ballad "On a Wedding," which is a masterpiece of sportive gaiety and good-humour. His genius was confined entirely to the light and agreeable" ("Select British Poets," 1824, p. vi.) But putting out of the question his merits as a poet, Suckling's qualifications as a letter-writer were very high; his extant correspondence is remarkable for the justness of his remarks, the solidity and accuracy of his judgment, the happiness of his figures, and the ease and sparkle of his style; and had he been spared longer, and it had been his ambition, we feel sure that he would have shone as brightly in politics as in literature.]

But, out, alas ! no sea I find  
Is troubled like a lover's mind.  
Within it rocks and shallows be,  
Despair and fond credulity."

But lest the writer's judgment should be considered as warped by prepossession in his favour, a few testimonies of others, better qualified than himself to appreciate the merits of composition, are adduced.

“The grace and elegance of his songs and ballads,” says Mr Ellis, “are inimitable.” “They have a pretty touch,” says Phillips, “of a gentle spirit, and seem to savour more of the grape than lamp.” And Mr Lloyd, in his “Memoirs, &c.,” has the following discriminative remarks:—“His poems are clean, sprightly, and natural—his discourses full and convincing—his plays well-humoured and taking—his letters fragrant and sparkling.” A writer in the *British Critic* observes, that “if these models had been more frequently and more happily copied, the French would not have been unrivalled in light poetry.”

In his prose compositions Suckling has been equally admired; his letters are full of wit, spirit, and gallantry, and have been rarely surpassed. His “Account of Religion by Reason,” and his letter to Jermyn prove his ability to reason with closeness, and compose with nervous elegance.

He fails most as a dramatist, though Phillips says his plays continued to draw audiences to the theatres in his days. They did not, however, long retain popularity. Nor is this surprising; for the genius of

Suckling nowhere appears to so little advantage as in his plays. Besides bearing very evident marks of crudity in the plans and hurry in the execution, they are marred by the recurrence of trifling incidents, which distract the attention from the development of the main catastrophe, and fritter it into littleness and poverty of effect. They are deficient, moreover, in that sweetness of versification and originality of thought which elsewhere distinguish his compositions; and the gleams of fire and intellect which occasionally warm us in their perusal are obscured too frequently by tedious pages of prolix declamation. ▶

\* His plays are but four. Of these, "The Sad One" is an unfinished tragedy, which, if completed in the style of the four acts left us by the author, could scarcely have entertained an audience at any time. The compilers of the "Biographia Dramatica," however, consider it as showing the hand of a master; yet it possesses, in the opinion of the writer, a complicated machinery, great plotting, and much bloodshed—smoke, in fact, but no fire—violent death in the very opening scene is afterwards repeated without sufficient reason. The scenes, too, are abrupt, and the language poor. The best lines, as might be expected from Suckling's known talents that way, are contained in the little song sung by Florelio's page in the fourth act—

" Hast thou seen the down i' th' air  
When wanton blasts have toss'd it?" &c.

As usual, Suckling is most successful in his descrip-

tions of feminine grace; describing Francelia's beauty, he says—

“ She has an eye, round as a globe,  
And black as jet ; so full of majesty and life,  
That when it most denies, it most invites.  
Her lips are gently swell'd unto  
Some blushing cherry, that hath newly tasted  
The dew from heaven.”

In the fourth act, Signor Multicarni and his assistants are introduced for no other purpose, it would appear, than as vehicles for a stroke of satire against lawyers. After appropriating to certain performers their several parts, he exclaims—

“ But who shall act the honest lawyer?  
'Tis a hard part that !”

The simile of comparing Clarimont's counsel to

“ Smith's water flung upon coals  
Which more inflames,”

is original, I believe, though not elegant.

“ Aglaura ” was, I fancy, Suckling's favourite play ; and it is so contrived that, by adopting either of two fifth acts, it can be represented as a tragedy or a comedy. The splendour with which it was first brought out has been noticed in a former page. It is certainly better conceived, and written with more spirit, than “ The Sad One,” though, as a tragedy, it is scarcely less bloody. But scenes of theatrical horror were witnessed in those days with greater delight than in our own ; and Shakespeare's bloodiest exhibitions in “ Hamlet ” or “ Macbeth ” were then

regarded with more than mere complacency. Suckling is, therefore, so far defensible; for he wrote in accordance with the taste of his age. The plan of "Aglaura," however, is not only very similar to that of "The Sad One," but it contains many ideas and entire sentences which occur in the latter; though "Aglaura," it is to be remembered, was the original play.

Like Shakespeare, Sir John is very fond of concluding his scenes with couplets. When acted as a tragedy, this piece should not have been protracted after the death of Aglaura. Like "The Sad One," it contains many lines descriptive of feminine charms—a subject on which Sir John seems ever willing to dwell—

" Lips  
Perfum'd by breath, sweet as the bean's first blossom."

In the opening scene of the first act, and in the first scene of the fourth act, are ideas which Suckling's familiarity with courts had probably suggested—

" We are envy's mark, and court-eyes carry far."

" Court friendship  
Is like a cable, that in storms is ever cut."

In the fourth act is a fine dialogue between Semanthe and Iolas.

The address of Orbella to the corpse of Ariaspes is full of pathos and sensibility, and not unworthy of Shakespeare himself.

The plan of "Aglaura" has been followed by Sir Robert Howard in his "Vestal Virgin;" while Pope has without acknowledgment transferred Suckling's ideas, in several instances, from these plays to his own poetry.<sup>1</sup>

The vivacity of Suckling's mind promised better success from his attempts in comedy; yet "The Goblins," it must be confessed, possesses little merit. The idea of the play is evidently borrowed from Shakespeare; and the same arguments may be advanced in defence of the machinery adopted in it as have been so powerfully adduced by Dr Johnson in support of Shakespeare's employment of witches in "Macbeth." A belief in the agency of witchcraft was still an universal notion in Suckling's time—nay, it had been rendered a fashionable illusion by the publication of King James's work on demonology. The curious expression which occurs in this play—

<sup>1</sup> "But, as when an authentic watch is shown,  
Each man winds up, and rectifies his own,  
So in our very judgments."

—*Epilogue to "Aglaura."*

"'Tis with our judgments as our watches, none  
Go just alike, yet each believes his own."

—*Pope's "Essay on Criticism."*

"High characters, cries one, and he would see  
Things that ne'er were, nor are, nor e'er will be."

—*Epilogue to "The Goblins."*

"Whoever thinks a faultless piece to see,  
Thinks what ne'er was, nor is, nor e'er shall be."

—*Pope's "Essay on Criticism."*

“The Sedgley curse upon thee,  
And the great fiend ride through thee  
Booted and spurr'd, with a scythe on his neck,”

is mentioned by Howell.<sup>1</sup>

In the second song in the third act, is an extraordinary line—

“The prince of darkness is a gentleman.”

The Lady Juliana Barnes uses an expression very similar—

“Jesus was a gentleman.”

“Brennoralt” I consider Suckling’s best play, and it might with little alteration be adapted to modern taste. The dialogue is more lively, and the plot less complicated and bloody, than in his other tragedies. It abounds in allusions to the existing state of public affairs, and has been thought to point in some places to his own situation. When he says the court is

“A most eternal place of low affronts,  
And then as low submissions,”

the conduct and humiliation of Digby were, probably, in the author’s recollection. In the beginning of the third act he introduces the king in conversation with Brennoralt and his councillors, which affords an opportunity of discussing the subjects then in agitation between Charles and the Scots. The passage is too long to be repeated in this place, particularly as it will be found in the body of this volume; but it is worthy of an attentive perusal. The play contains

---

<sup>1</sup> [See Hazlitt’s “Proverbs,” 1869, p. 365.]

. . . The *Additionals* have a separate title, dated 1659. They consist of supplementary poems and letters, and the tragedy of "The Sad One," not before printed.]<sup>1</sup>

4. [THE WORKS OF SIR JOHN SUCKLING. Containing all his Poems, &c. London : Printed for, &c. &c., 1696, 8°, with separate titles, dated 1694. Portrait, without the engraver's name, after Marshall.]
  5. THE WORKS OF SIR JOHN SUCKLING. Containing his Poems, Letters, and Plays. London : Printed for Jacob Tonson, 1709, 8°, with a portrait.
  6. THE WORKS OF SIR JOHN SUCKLING. Containing his Poems, Letters, and Plays. London : Printed for Jacob Tonson, at Shakespeare's Head, over against Katharine Street in the Strand, 1719, 8°, with a portrait.
  7. THE WORKS OF SIR JOHN SUCKLING. Containing his Poems, Letters, and Plays. No portrait is prefixed. 2 vols., 12°, 1770.
- 

<sup>1</sup> [In this third impression the new matter is introduced by a separate title, as follows :—"The Last Remains of Sir John Suckling. Being a Full Collection of all his Poems and Letters, which have been so long expected, and never till now published, with the licence and approbation of his noble and dearest friends." This impression is undoubtedly of importance and value, and is comparatively unknown. In the "Ballad on a Wedding," it supplies an additional stanza, and the new matter at the end, furnished (as we are told) by Lady Southcot, more than doubles the number of poems, as found in the octavos of 1646 and 1648. So far as the volume, however, merely reproduces the old matter, its text is decidedly inferior. Of the edition of 1658 there is a reissue, perhaps a surreptitious one, with the same title, imprint and date, but with different typographical ornaments, and altogether a distinct setting-up. It is accompanied by a portrait, copied from Marshall's, and without any engraver's name.]

## A LIST OF THE ENGRAVED PORTRAITS OF SIR JOHN SUCKLING.

1. A bust, engraved by Cross; painter unknown.
2. A portrait prefixed to his "Poems and Plays," 1646, 8°.  
Painter uncertain; engraved by Marshall.
3. A portrait prefixed to the edition of his works, 1709, 8°.  
Painted by Vandyke; engraved by Vander Gucht.
4. A second engraving by Vander Gucht, from a portrait in the editor's possession. [Probably the portrait before the edition of 1696 is here meant.]
5. A portrait of the poet as a child, with ruffles at the wrists.
6. A portrait, large folio, in the set of "Poets." Painted by Vandyke; engraved by Vertue. 1741.
7. A portrait prefixed to the selection from the works, 1836.  
Painted by Vandyke; engraved by James Thomson. 1835.
8. [A portrait taken in early life, half-length, the hair flowing.  
Engraved by Newton from a drawing by Thurston, after an original picture in the Ashmolean Museum at Oxford.  
In the series of "Portraits of the British Poets," and in the present volume, through the obliging courtesy of Messrs Ballantyne & Co.]
9. [The anonymous print prefixed to the spurious edition of 1658 already referred to.]

## ADDITIONAL NOTES.<sup>1</sup>

---

—o—

P. 6. *If when Don Cupid's dart, &c.*—"Rochester and others among the early poets have written poems on the model of this, and Leigh Hunt among the moderns."—*W. W.*

P. 8. *A Sessions of the Poets.*—"The characters of the poets who appeal at the Sessions are drawn with great discrimination, particularly that of the poet Jonson. His own attachment to pleasure and indifference to fame are expressed with great [word illegible]."—*W. W.*

P. 8. *Tom Carew.*—"Carew's poems have been lately reprinted, and have not obtained much notice. He is chiefly known as the author of the beautiful sonnet beginning 'He that a coral lip admires.'"<sup>2</sup>—*W. W.* Wordsworth adds on the next page: "Some poems on the model of this ['The Sessions'] will be found in the 'State Poems,' but they all appear to me inferior in grace and simplicity."

P. 8. *His muse was hide-bound.*—So the edition of 1648; those of 1646 and 1658 read *hard-bound*.—*H.*

P. 13. *Love's World.*—"This ode abounds with the most childish conceits, but which are occasionally redeemed by beauties of the highest order. Byron has apparently imitated the last two lines of the fourth stanza." Referring to the same poem,

---

<sup>1</sup> These notes have been principally derived from a copy of Suckling's works, edit. 1658, purporting to have been formerly in the possession of Wordsworth. All the notes written by the poet himself are initialed *W. W.*, or signed in full, evidently to distinguish them from notes in two other hands, those of George Chalmers and John Lawson; but the authenticity of this MS. matter has (it is right to say) been called in question. The handwriting is certainly very like Wordsworth's, which varied a good deal from time to time; but it was thought that, at any rate, these remarks, whether by Wordsworth or not, could not be without a certain value.

<sup>2</sup> [Carew's "Poems," by Hazlitt, p. 21. The piece referred to is called "Disdain Returned."]

Wordsworth observes, two pages further on: "Some of the thoughts are fine, though somewhat quaintly express'd."

P. 14. *My fancy, &c.*—"Scott, in his 'Life of Byron,' has quoted these two lines."—*W. W.*

P. 20 [of ed. 1658].<sup>1</sup> *Why so pale, &c.*—"This celebrated song forms a part of the tragedy of 'Aglaura,' where it is sung by Orsanæs. This song is one of the few of his which are remembered. Perhaps this and the [word illegible] are better known to the public than any other of his. The lover's indifference is admirably expressed."—*W.*

P. 18. *O, for some honest lover's ghost.*—Many poets have expressed the same wish. See James Greeme's "Girls' Dreams."

P. 20. *It is so rare and new a thing.*—"This reminds us of Byron—

‘And 'tis some praise in peers to write at all! ’

Malvezzi's work is now rather rare—at least the translation."—*W. W.*

P. 23. *There never yet was woman made.*—"This poem is remarkable for ease and sprightliness, the true characteristics of Sir J. Suckling's muse, and may therefore be taken as a fair specimen of his powers."—*W. W.* He adds presently: "Suckling seems to have been intimately acquainted with the female heart; he praises, ridicules, and adores the sex in the same breath. The germs of thought of some of Moore's most beautiful lyrics may be found in this ode."<sup>1</sup>

P. 28 [of ed. 1658].—"This song must have been popular in its day, as it will be found copied in many of the early collections of songs."—*W. W.* He adds just below, referring to the last two lines of the first stanza: "A similar thought may be found in Moore. Speaking of love, he says—

‘That, though the heart would break with *more*,  
It could not live with *less*.’"<sup>2</sup>

P. 25. *To my friend Will Davenant.*—Several poems addressed to Davenant will be found in the volume.

<sup>1</sup> [Omitted in present edition, as it is repeated in its proper place.]

<sup>2</sup> [Inserted in present volume in its proper place in "Aglaura."]

P. 28. *I prythee spare me.*—“Moore has borrowed the idea of some of his best . . . from this ode.” Below the fourth stanza he notes : “This is not only poetical, but too fine [? fine too].”—*W. W.*

P. 29. *Upon my Lady Carlisle's walking, &c.*—“Excellence in poetry was not understood in that age. Obscurity was mistaken for sublimity, and pedantry for learning. Nature and simplicity were banished from poetry. Milton and Dryden alone seem to have understood the true principles of poetry, and were not vitiated by the prevailing taste. Milton, for the sake of temporary celebrity, would not conform to the reigning taste, and was therefore not popular. . . . Carew was a courtier, and in some fame with Charles I., who conferred several honourable offices on him. Some of his lyrical poems are very beautiful, though occasionally deformed by obscurities. He, like his friend Suckling, was ambitious of being ranked among the metaphysical poets, but fortunately had not power to attain it.”—*W. W.* It may be just added that the Lady Carlisle here named can hardly have been any other than the wife of James Hay, first Earl of that creation, 1622-36.

P. 34. *A supplement, &c.*—“The continuation is equal to the first part.”

✓ P. 36. *Made my approaches, &c.*—Byron appears to have imitated this stanza in the following lines :—

“Ours was the smile none saw beside ;  
The glance that none might understand ;  
The whisper'd thought of hearts allied ;  
The pressure of the thrilling hand.”

He adds on the next page : “In this poem Suckling seems to have succeeded completely in what is called the metaphysical style of poetry, which predominated in his time, and, like all the poetry of this school, is highly . . . , but wants nature.”

✗ P. 40. *The sweat of learned Jonson's brain, &c.*—“Compare Milton—

Then to the well-trod stage anon,  
If Jonson's learned sock be on,  
Or sweetest Shakespeare, fancy's child,  
Warble his native wood-notes wild.”

—‘*L'Allegro.*’ Which was wrote first?’—*J. Lawson.*

P. 42. *A Ballad upon a Wedding*.—“This is really excellent, brisk, humorous, witty, and poetical.”—*J. Lawson*. “I fully concur in Mr Lawson’s criticism, but wish that he had been more explicit.”—*W. W.*

P. 42. *A house with stairs*.—Suffolk House, originally Northampton, and afterwards Northumberland, House. The “place where we do sell our hay” was, of course, the present Haymarket, and a gentleman still living tells me he remembers hay sold there in his early days. Another person, who died not long since, used to speak of a haystack standing within his recollection at the bottom of Gray’s Inn Lane.—*H.*

P. 43. *The maid, &c.*—“Moore’s description of the beauty of Lillas in the ‘Loves of the Angels’ appears to be an imitation of Suckling.”

P. 44. *He would have kiss’d, &c.*—“The bashful tenderness of the bride inimitable.”—*W. W.* He adds on the next page: “His (Suckling’s) portraits of female beauty are not so finished as those of Moore and Byron, but they possess greater attraction, because he gives only a glimpse, and leaves the rest to fancy. Indeed, Homer, in describing the peerless Helen, leaves it almost entirely to the imagination, which is the great secret of poetry.”

P. 45. *Now hats fly off, &c.*—“For nature and feeling this passage is above praise.”

P. 45. *On the sudden, &c.*—“This stanza is truly beautiful.”

P. 46. “This [the Ballad] may safely be pronounced his *opus magnum*; indeed, for grace and simplicity it stands unrivalled in the whole compass of ancient or modern poetry.”—*W. W.*

P. 47. *My dearest rival, &c.*—“This poem, like most of his works, contains great beauties, alternating with the most childish conceits.”—*W.*

P. 49. *Honest lover whatsoever, &c.*—“This poem certainly merits the epithet *sprightly*.”—*W. W.*

P. 53. *But every smile, &c.*—“These two lines are very beautiful. The rest of the poem is hardly above mediocrity; but two such lines as these do not recompense us for a mass of baser matter.”—*W. W.*

P. 54. *Farewell to Love*.—“This ode is inferior to none of his

writing for nature and simplicity, but it partakes of all their faults.”—*W. W.*

P. 79. *A Song*.—“This is an imitation of a song in Ben Jonson’s ‘Devil is an Ass,’ act ii. sc. 2.”—*Anon.*

P. 109. *Aglaura*.—Suckling was among the few who read Shakespeare in that age; of all poets he seems to have been his favourite. “He not only imitated him in his writings, but praised and quoted him in all the polished circles of the day, of which he was a distinguished ornament. The exertions of Suckling to make Shakespeare popular have hitherto escaped the notice of the editors and biographers of that poet.”—*W. W.*

The following lengthy note is written on vacant spaces in various parts of the “Account of Religion,” “Aglaura,” &c., and is introduced by a short remark from another pen, or at least in another hand :—

“Suckling’s observations on religion are always just, and sometimes profound. He has nobly vindicated the use of reason, which he very properly calls ‘the highest and most golden privilege we enjoy.’”—*J. Lawson.* “Sir John at an early age made great proficiency in the ancient and modern languages; he was also an excellent musician, at an age when music was little cultivated in England. Every poet is supposed to be a musician in his ear, if not practically. Moore, in his ‘Retrospect of Prose,’ [?] writing in England, has named Milton as the only poet of eminence in England who was a practical musician, which is a piece of injustice to Sir J. Suckling, who was at least as great a proficient in music as Milton. Moore could hardly have erred through ignorance, because, as he tells us in his Preface to ‘Little’s Poems,’ he has made the early English amatory poets [?] his study, and [he] has borrowed largely from them, almost always without acknowledgment. Were it necessary, innumerable instances might be produced where [he] has borrowed hints for some of his best poems from Cowley, Donne, Burns, Suckling, and others. Sir John Suckling, dazzled by the reputation of the French poets, imitated their style, but he did not succeed. But he soon discovered his mistake; he was not fitted by nature to excel in that species of writing.

“Winstanley says his poem smells more of the grape than the

lamp. Suckling, Denham, and Walker were the first who polished our versification. All attempted the metaphysical style, but did not succeed. They wanted resources. Donne, the founder of the metaphysical school, had passed his life in the cloister, with no other aim but eminence in literature, and thus acquired a vast fund of learning, as [?] and] by constant exercise, made his hand expert at metaphysical disquisitions, of which he availed himself in his poetry.

"Cowley, his great rival, [and who] though not the founder of the school, was certainly its greatest ornament, had passed his life in a similar manner. Cleveland ranks next to him ; he was also a man of great erudition, and perhaps equal in powers of poetry. His youth and manhood had been passed at Oxford and Cambridge, where he highly distinguished himself as a man of learning, an orator, and a poet. His letters possess great wit and humour, and much the same faults and beauties as his poetry.

"The Metaphysical School was formed on false principles ; its reign was but temporary ; and it was the means of creating a rea[c]tion among those who were ambitious of being ranked among its [sic] scholars, which led to all our subsequent improvements in versification and language. The school which arose in opposition is called, in contradistinction, the French School of Poetry. They proposed the ancients for their model, but found they could only imitate their chaste, nervous style of thought. The English language could not also receive their measures.<sup>1</sup> Recourse was therefore had to the French School, which was found more adapted to the genius of the language, and their system of versification was accordingly introduced. Rhyme, a modern invention, was deemed unclassical ; but the best poets have not disdained it, and public taste has given a certain superiority to rhyme : very powerful arguments can be brought

<sup>1</sup> "The genius of the language is so essentially different, that all attempts to introduce the ancient measures have hitherto failed. The use of hexameters . . . contributed to that oblivion in which the poetry of Sydney, Abraham Fraunce, and others is buried at present. Milton, Collins, and . . . have imparted considerable grace and harmony to some of the ancient measures, and in the present age Southey and others have attempted to bring them into general use, but without much success."

against it. The new school soon found numerous admirers, but was in great danger from the popularity of the other school. A revolution in public taste is never effected without great difficulty. Many men of learning loudly decried the new school . . . . The decision [of] men qualified to judge in matters of taste no doubt influenced the public. The new school would probably have fallen, but fortunately at this critical juncture Dryden appeared. He soon saw the intrinsic worth of the new school, and was not slow at perceiving the defects of the old. No man ever possessed a finer genius for poetry. Every difficulty vanished before him, and the new school was established on the firmest basis, and has ever since retained its superiority.

"For Pope, however, was reserved the honour of giving to English versification its final polish.

"I have said that the French School failed for want of resources; but I have given an account of the other school['s] habits and acquirements to illustrate my remarks. As a further illustration, I must give an account of the poets called the French School.

"Waller was not remarkable for learning, and he was not early initiated into poetry. Suckling was a courtier and a wit. And therefore they may be all said to have . . . for the metaphysical . . . , which the other school . . . , and the reputation they now enjoy has amply repaid them for the neglect they sustained in their own age . . . to say that—as their books have advanced in popularity, their . . . have retrograded in the same degree.

W. WORDSWORTH."

"*Mount Rydal, May 9, 1838.*"

Vol. II., p. 75. *Brennoralt.*—Sir John Suckling was a great admirer of Shakespeare, and certainly studied him to advantage. As a follower of him, he has managed to hit off his style finely—perhaps better than any imitator of him."—*J. Lawson.* "Imitations of Shakespeare and other contemporary poets are very frequent in this play."—*Wordsworth.*

*TO THE MOST HONOURED AND HIGHLY  
DESERVING THE LADY SOUTHCOT.*

—o—

THOUGH I approach with all humility in presenting these Poems to your ladyship, yet dare I not despair of their acceptation, since it were a kind of felony to offer them to any other. They come to you at so many capacities, that they seem rather to return and rebound back to you, as the famous Arcadia was sent to that excellent lady who was sister to that great author. Your ladyship best knows that I now bring the last remains of your memorable brother, Sir John Suckling. And as here are all the world will ever hope for, so here are nothing else but his, not a line but what at first flowed from him—and will soon approve itself to be too much his to be altered or supplied by any other hand; and sure he were a bold man had thoughts to attempt it. After which 'twould be high presumption in me to say more, but that I am, madam, your ladyship's most obliged and most obedient humble servant,

HUM. MOSELEY.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> First printed in the edition of 1658. Respecting Lady Southcot, see Memoir.



## *THE STATIONER TO THE READER.<sup>1</sup>*

—o—

A MONG the highest and most refined wits of the nation, this gentle and princely poet took his generous rise from the Court, where, having flourished with splendour and reputation, he lived only long enough to see the sunset of that majesty from whose auspicious beams he derived his lustre, and with whose declining state his own loyal fortunes were obscured. But after the several changes of those times, being sequestered from the more serene contentments of his native country, he first took care to secure the dearest and choicest of his papers in the several cabinets of his noble and faithful friends, and among other testimonies of his worth, these elegant and florid pieces of his fancy were preserved in the custody of his truly honourable and virtuous sister, with whose free permission they were transcribed, and now published exactly according to the originals.

This might be sufficient to make you acknowledge that these are the real and genuine works of Sir John

---

<sup>1</sup> [This preface is common to the editions of 1646, '48, '58.]

Suckling ; but if you can yet doubt, let any judicious soul seriously consider the freedom of the fancy, richness of the conceipt, proper expression, with that air and spirit diffused through every part, and he will find such a perfect resemblance with what hath been formerly known, that he cannot with modesty doubt them to be his.

I could tell you further (for I myself am the best witness of it), what a thirst and general inquiry hath been after what I here present you, by all that have either seen or heard of them. And by that time you have read them, you will believe me, who have, now for many years, annually published the productions of the best wits of our own and foreign nations.

H. M.

*TO THE READER.<sup>1</sup>*

— o —

WHILE Suckling's name is in the forehead of this book, these poems can want no preparation. It had been a prejudice to posterity they should have slept longer, and an injury to his own ashes. They that conversed with him alive and truly, under which notion I comprehend only knowing gentlemen, his soul (being transcendent and incommunicable to others but by reflection), will honour these posthumous Ideas of their friend; and if any have lived in so much darkness as not to have known so great an ornament to our age, by looking upon these Remains with civility and understanding, they may timely yet repent and be forgiven.

In this age of paper-prostitution a man may buy the price of some authors into the price of their volume; but know, the name that leadeth into this Elysium is sacred to Art and Honour, and no man that is not excellent in both is qualified a competent

---

<sup>1</sup> This notice precedes the "Last Remains" in the edition of 1658. Not in editions of 1646, '48.

judge. For when knowledge is allowed, yet education in the course of a gentleman requires as many descents as go to make one, and he that is bold upon his unequal stock to traduce this Name, or learning, will deserve to be condemned again into ignorance (his original sin), and die in it.

But I keep back the ingenuous reader by my unworthy preface. The gate is open, and thy soul invited to a garden of ravishing variety. Admire his wit that created these for thy delight, while I withdraw into a shade, and contemplate who must follow.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> [This preface, though unsigned, was almost certainly written by Humphrey Moseley, the stationer. In the last sentence he refers, of course, to the next poet to be undertaken, as a sequel to Suckling.]

*P O E M S.*

VOL. I.

A

[SEPARATE TITLE TO THE POEMS, 1646-8-58.<sup>1</sup>]

*Poems, &c., written by Sir John Suckling. Printed by his  
owne copy. The Lyrick Poems were set in Musick by Mr Henry  
Lawes, Gent., of the Kings Chappell, and one of His Majesties  
Private Musick.*

*A chronological or other systematic arrangement of Suckling's  
lyric and miscellaneous pieces should have been attempted; but,  
on examination, the process appeared to be one of peculiar difficulty,  
without being, on the whole, perhaps, of very great importance.  
The chief part have no note of time.*

---

<sup>1</sup> The variations are only orthographical.



*On New-Year's Day, 1640.*

*To the King.*

I.

A WAKE, great sir, the sun shines here,  
Gives all your subjects a New-Year,  
Only we stay till you appear ;  
For thus by us your power is understood ;  
He may make fair days, you must make them good.  
Awake, awake,  
And take  
Such presents as poor men can make,  
They can add little unto bliss  
Who cannot wish.

2.

May no ill vapour cloud the sky,  
Bold storms invade the sovereignty,  
But gales of joy, so fresh, so high,  
That you may think Heaven sent to try this year  
What sail, or burthen, a king's mind could bear.  
Awake, awake, &c.

## 3.

May all the discords in your state  
(Like those in music we create),  
Be governed at so wise a rate,  
That what would of itself sound harsh, or fright,  
May be so tempered that it may delight.  
Awake, awake, &c.

## 4.

What conquerors from battles find,  
Or lovers when their doves are kind,  
Take up henceforth our master's mind,  
Make such strange rapes upon the place, 't may be—  
No longer joy there, but an ecstasy.  
Awake, awake, &c.

## 5.

May every pleasure and delight,  
That has, or does, your sense invite,  
Double this year, save those o'th' night ;  
Awake, awake,  
And take  
Such presents as poor men can make,  
They can add little unto bliss  
Who cannot wish.

*Loving and Beloved.*

## I.

THERE never yet was honest man  
That ever drove the trade of love ;  
It is impossible, nor can  
Integrity our ends promove ;  
For kings and lovers are alike in this,  
That their chief art in reign dissembling is.

## 2.

Here we are loved, and there we love :  
Good nature now and passion strive  
Which of the two should be above,  
And laws unto the other give.  
So we false fire with art sometimes discover,  
And the true fire with the same art do cover.

## 3.

What rack can fancy find so high ?  
Here we must court, and here engage ;  
Though in the other place we die.  
O, 'tis torture all, and cosenage !  
And which the harder is I cannot tell,  
To hide true love, or make false love look well.

## 4.

Since it is thus, god of desire,  
 Give me my honesty again,  
 And take thy brands back, and thy fire ;  
 I am weary of the state I am in :  
 Since (if the very best should now befall),  
Love's triumph must be Honour's funeral.

---

## I.

**I**F when Don Cupid's dart  
 Doth wound a heart,  
 We hide our grief  
 And shun relief ;  
 The smart increaseth on that score ;  
 For wounds unsearched but rankle more.

## 2.

Then if we whine, look pale,  
 And tell our tale,  
 Men are in pain  
 For us again ;  
 So neither speaking doth become  
 The lover's state, nor being dumb.

## 3.

When this I do descry,  
 Then thus think I :  
 Love is the fart  
 Of every heart ;  
 It pains a man when 't is kept close,  
 And others doth offend when 't is let loose.

## *A Sessions of the Poets.*

A SESSION was held the other day,  
 And Apollo himself was at it, they say,  
 The laurel that had been so long reserved,  
 Was now to be given to him best deserved.

And

Therefore the wits of the town came thither,  
 'Twas strange to see how they flocked together,  
 Each strongly confident of his own [s]way,  
 Thought to gain the laurel away that day.

There was Selden, and he sat hard by the chair ;  
 Wenman<sup>1</sup> not far off, which was very fair ;  
 Sands<sup>2</sup> with Townsend,<sup>3</sup> for they kept no order ;  
 Digby<sup>4</sup> and Shillingsworth<sup>5</sup> a little further.

And

There was Lucan's translator, too,<sup>6</sup> and he  
 That makes God speak so big in 's poetry ;<sup>7</sup>

<sup>1</sup> No poet of this name is known, unless it was Thomas Wenman, author of the "Legend of Mary, Queen of Scots," printed by Fry, from a MS., in 1810.

<sup>2</sup> George Sandys.

<sup>3</sup> Aurelian Townshend.

<sup>4</sup> This could hardly be George Digby, Earl of Bristol. He must have been a very young man in 1637, the reputed date of the composition of this poem.

<sup>5</sup> Chillingworth, the divine, cannot here be intended, as supposed by Mr Suckling ("Selections," 1856, p. 86).

<sup>6</sup> Thomas May.

<sup>7</sup> Query, Francis Quarles.

Selwin and Waller,<sup>1</sup> and Bartlets<sup>2</sup> both the brothers ;  
Jack Vaughan<sup>3</sup> and Porter,<sup>4</sup> and divers others.

The first that broke silence was good old Ben,  
Prepared before with canary wine,  
And he told them plainly he deserved the bays,  
For his were called works, where others were but plays.  
And

Bid them remember how he had purged the stage  
Of errors, that had lasted many an age ;  
And he hoped they did not think the "Silent Woman,"  
The "Fox," and the "Alchemist," out-done by no man.

Apollo stopped him there, and bad him not go on,  
'Twas merit, he said, and not presumption,  
Must carry 't ; at which Ben turned about,  
And in great choler offered to go out.

But

Those that were there thought it not fit  
To discontent so ancient a wit ;  
And therefore Apollo called him back again,  
And made him mine host of his own New Inn.

Tom Carew was next, but he had a fault  
That would not well stand with a laureat ;  
His muse was hide-bound, and the issue of 's brain  
Was seldom brought forth but with trouble and pain.

And

<sup>1</sup> The copy of 1658 has *Walter*.

<sup>2</sup> I know nothing decidedly of the writings of these brothers. There was a William Bartlett, who published, in 1647 and 1649, two quarto volumes on religious subjects ; but I doubt if he be the same author to whom Suckling alludes.—*Note in edit.* 1836.

<sup>3</sup> Sir John Vaughan. He was a secret enemy to monarchy, though he never engaged in any open hostility against Charles the First. He died in 1674, and was buried in the Temple Church by his friend Selden, to whose will he had acted as executor.—*Note in edit.* 1836.

<sup>4</sup> Endymion Porter.

All that were present there did agree,  
 A laureate muse should be easy and free,  
 Yet sure 'twas not that, but 'twas thought that, his grace  
 Considered, he was well he had a cup-bearer's place.

Will. Davenant, ashamed of a foolish mischance,  
 That he had got lately travelling in France,  
 Modestly hoped the handsomeness of's muse  
 Might any deformity about him excuse.

And

Surely the company would have been content,  
 If they could have found any precedent ;  
 But in all their records either in verse or prose,  
 There was not one laureate without a nose.

To Will. Bartlet sure all the wits meant well,  
 But first they would see how his snow would sell :  
 Will. smiled and swore in their judgments they went less,  
 That concluded of merit upon success.

Suddenly taking his place again,  
 He gave way to Selwin, who straight stepped in,  
 But, alas ! he had been so lately a wit,  
 That Apollo hardly knew him yet.

Toby Matthews<sup>1</sup> (pox on him !) how came he there ?  
 Was whispering nothing in somebody's ear ;

<sup>1</sup> Toby Matthews. The reader will find a long notice of this eccentric character in Walpole's "Anecdotes of Painting." His Lordship calls him "one of those heteroclite animals who finds his place anywhere. His father was Archbishop of York, and he a Jesuit. He was supposed a wit, and believed himself a politician : his works are ridiculous." Suckling has introduced him in the same manner as he has "Jack Bond" and Tom Carew, as an occasional interlocutor with himself in his poems. His "whispering nothing in somebody's ear," alludes to a ridiculous habit he had of whispering in company.—*Note in edit. 1836.*

When he had the honour to be named in court,  
But, sir, you may thank my Lady Carlisle for 't :

For had not her care furnished you out  
With something of handsome, without all doubt  
You and your sorry Lady Muse had been  
In the number of those that were not let in.

In haste from the court two or three came in,  
And they brought letters, forsooth, from the Queen ;  
'Twas discreetly done, too, for if th' had come  
Without them, th' had scarce been let into the room.

X Suckling next was called, but did not appear,  
But straight one whispered Apollo i'th' ear,  
That of all men living he cared not for 't,  
He loved not the Muses so well as his sport.

And prized black eyes, or a lucky hit  
At bowls, above all the trophies of wit ;  
But Apollo was angry, and publicly said,  
'Twere fit that a fine were set upon 's head.

Wat Montague<sup>1</sup> now stood forth to his trial,  
And did not so much as suspect a denial ;  
But witty Apollo asked him first of all,  
If he understood his own pastoral.

<sup>1</sup> The Honourable Walter Montague, author of " *Miscellanea Spiritualia*," 1648.

" Wat Montague wrote the ' Shepherd's Paradise,' published in 1659, 8vo. He was a papist, and suspected of having been concerned in the conversion of Lady Newburgh. On that occasion, it is said in a letter of Lord Conway's, ' The king did use such words of Wat Montagu and Sir Tobie Matthew, that the fright made Wat keep his chamber longer than his sickness would have detained him.' "—*Note in edit.* 1836.

For, if he could do it, 'twould plainly appear,  
He understood more than any man there,  
And did merit the bays above all the rest,  
But the Monsieur was modest, and silence confessed.

During these troubles, in the crowd was hid  
One that Apollo soon missed, little Cid;<sup>1</sup>  
And having spied him call'd him out of the throng,  
And advis'd him in his ear not to write so strong.

Then Murray<sup>2</sup> was summon'd, but 'twas urged that he  
Was chief already of another company.

Hales<sup>3</sup> set by himself most gravely did smile  
To see them about nothing keep such a coil ;  
Apollo had spied him, but knowing his mind  
Passed by, and call'd Falkland that sat just behind.

But

He was of late so gone with divinity,  
That he had almost forgot his poetry ;  
Though to say the truth (and Apollo did know it)  
He might have been both his priest and his poet.

At length who but an Alderman did appear,  
At which Will. Davenant began to swear ;  
But wiser Apollo bad him draw nigher,  
And when he was mounted a little higher,

<sup>1</sup> Probably Joseph Rutter, author of an English version of Corneille's *Cid*, 1637-40.

<sup>2</sup> William Murray.

<sup>3</sup> Query, Sir Matthew Hale, who seems to have been on terms of intimacy with many of the wits of the day. Or, as Mr Suckling supposed, it may refer to John Hales of Eton, the known friend of Carew, to whom Suckling elsewhere addresses an epistle.

He openly declared that it was the best sign  
Of good store of wit to have good store of coin ;  
And without a syllable more or less said  
He put the laurel on the Alderman's head.

At this all the wits were in such amaze  
That for a good while they did nothing but gaze  
One upon another : not a man in the place  
But had discontent writ in great in his face.

Only the small poets cheer'd up again,  
Out of hope, as 'twas thought, of borrowing ;  
But sure they were out, for he forfeits his crown,  
When he lends to any poet about the town.

## *Love's World.*

IN each man's heart that doth begin  
 To love, there's ever framed within  
 A little world, for so I found  
 When first my passion reason drown'd.

Instead of earth unto this frame,                  *Earth.*  
 I had a faith was still the same ;  
 For to be right it doth behove  
 It be as that, fixed and not move.

Yet as the earth may sometime shake  
 (For winds shut up will cause a quake),  
 So often jealousy and fear,  
 Stolen into mine, cause tremblings there.

My Flora was my sun, for as                  *Sun.*  
 One sun, so but one Flora, was ;  
 All other faces borrowed hence  
 Their light and grace, as stars do thence.

My hopes I call my moon, for they                  *Moon.*  
 I constant still were at no stay ;  
 But as my sun inclined to me,  
 Or more or less were sure to be.

Sometimes it would be full, and then  
 O, too—too soon decrease again ;

Eclipsed sometimes that 'twould so fall  
There would appear no hope at all.

My thoughts, 'cause infinite they be,  
Must be those many stars we see ;  
Of which some wandered at their will,  
But most on her were fixed still.

*Stars.**Fixed Planets.*

My burning flame and hot desire  
Must be the element of fire,  
Which hath as yet so secret been,  
That it as that was never seen.

*Elements of fire.*

No kitchen fire nor eating flame,  
But innocent : hot but in name ;  
A fire that's starved when fed, and gone  
When too much fuel is laid on.

But as it plainly doth appear  
That fire subsists by being near  
The moon's bright orb, so I believe  
Ours doth, for hope keeps love alive.

My fancy was the air, most free  
And full of mutability ;  
Big with chimeras, vapours here  
Innumerable hatched as there.

*Air.*

The sea's my mind, which calm would be      *Sea.*  
Were it from winds (my passions) free ;  
But out alas ! no sea I find  
Is troubled like a lover's mind.

Within it rocks and shallows be :  
Despair and fond credulity.

But in this world it were good reason  
We did distinguish time and season ;  
Her presence then did make the day,  
And night shall come when she 's away.

Long absence in far distant place  
Creates the winter ; and the space  
She tarried with me, well I might  
Call it my summer of delight.

*Winter.*

*Summer.*

Diversity of weather came  
From what she did, and thence had name ;  
Sometimes sh' would smile—that made it fair ;  
And when she laughed, the sun shined clear.

Sometimes sh' would frown, and sometimes weep,  
So clouds and rain their turns do keep ;  
Sometimes again sh' would be all ice,  
Extremely cold, extremely nice.

But soft, my muse, the world is wide,  
And all at once was not descried :  
It may fall out some honest lover  
The rest hereafter will discover.

*Sonnets.<sup>1</sup>*

## I.

DOST see how unregarded now  
 That piece of beauty passes ?  
 There was a time when I did vow  
     To that alone ;  
     But mark the fate of faces ;  
 The red and white works now no more on me,  
 Than if it could not charm, or I not see.

## 2.

And yet the face continues good,  
     And I have still desires,  
 And still the self-same flesh and blood,  
     As apt to melt,  
     And suffer from those fires ;  
 O, some kind power unriddle where it lies :  
 Whether my heart be faulty, or her eyes ?

## 3.

She every day her man does kill,  
     And I as often die ;

---

<sup>1</sup> In the old copies, the familiar song beginning "Why so pale" precedes these sonnets ; but it is evidently an erroneous repetition, as it is given again *in extenso* in its proper place, the fourth act of "Aglaura."

Neither her power then nor my will  
 Can questioned be ;  
 What is the mystery ?  
 Sure beauty's empires, like to greater states,  
 Have certain periods set, and hidden fates.

---

## II.

## I.

O F thee, kind boy, I ask no red and white,  
 To make up my delight :  
 No odd becoming graces,  
 Black eyes, or little know-not-whats in faces ;  
 Make me but mad enough, give me good store  
 Of love for her I court :  
 I ask no more,  
 'Tis love in love that makes the sport.

## 2.

There's no such thing as that we beauty call,  
 It is mere cosenage all ;  
 For though some long ago  
 Like t' certain colours mingled so and so,  
 That doth not tie me now from choosing new.  
 If I a fancy take  
 To black and blue,  
 That fancy doth it beauty make.

## 3.

'Tis not the meat, but 'tis the appetite  
 Makes eating a delight,  
 And if I like one dish  
 More than another, that a pheasant is ;

What in our watches, that in us is found ;  
So to the height and nick

We up be wound,  
No matter by what hand or trick.

---

## III.

## I.

O, FOR some honest lover's ghost,  
Some kind unbodied post  
Sent from the shades below !  
I strangely long to know,  
Whether the nobler chaplets wear,  
Those that their mistress' scorn did bear,  
Or those that were used kindly.

## 2.

For whatsoe'er they tell us here  
To make those sufferings dear,  
'Twill there I fear be found,  
That to the being crowned  
T' have loved alone will not suffice,  
Unless we also have been wise,  
And have our loves enjoyed.

## 3.

What posture can we think him in,  
That here unloved again  
Departs, and 's thither gone,  
Where each sits by his own ?  
Or how can that elysium be,  
Where I my mistress still must see  
Circled in others' arms ?

## 4.

For there the judges all are just,  
And Sophonisba must  
Be his whom she held dear,  
Not his who loved her here.  
The sweet Philoclea, since she died,  
Lies by her Pirocles his side,  
Not by Amphialus.

## 5.

Some bays, perchance, or myrtle bough,  
For difference crowns the brow  
Of those kind souls that were  
The noble martyrs here ;  
And if that be the only odds,  
(As who can tell?) ye kinder gods,  
Give me the woman here.

To his much honoured the Lord  
Lepington, upon his translation  
of Malvezzi, his *Romulus* and  
*Tarquin*.<sup>1</sup>

IT is so rare and new a thing to see  
Ought that belongs to young nobility  
In print, but their own clothes, that we must praise  
You as we would do those first show the ways  
To arts or to new worlds. You have begun ;  
Taught travelled youth what 'tis it should have done  
For 't has indeed too strong a custom been  
To carry out more wit than we bring in.  
You have done otherwise : brought home, my lord,  
The choicest things famed countries do afford :  
Malvezzi by your means is English grown,  
And speaks our tongue as well now as his own.  
Malvezzi, he whom 'tis as hard to praise  
To merit, as to imitate his ways.  
He does not show us Rome great suddenly,  
As if the empire were a tympany,  
But gives it natural growth, tells how and why  
The little body grew so large and high.  
Describes each thing so lively that we are  
Concerned ourselves before we are aware :  
And at the wars they and their neighbours waged,

---

<sup>1</sup> This book by Henry Cary, Lord Lepington, was printed in 1637.

Each man is present still, and still engaged.  
Like a good prospective he strangely brings  
Things distant to us ; and in these two kings  
We see what made greatness. And what 't has been  
Made that greatness contemptible again.  
And all this not tediously derived,  
But like to worlds in little maps contrived.  
'Tis he that doth the Roman dame restore,  
Makes Lucrece chaster for her being whore ;  
Gives her a kind revenge for Tarquin's sin ;  
For ravish'd first, she ravisheth again.  
She says such fine things after 't, that we must  
In spite of virtue thank foul rape and lust,  
Since 't was the cause no woman would have had,  
Though she 's of Lucrece side, Tarquin less bad.  
But stay ; like one that thinks to bring his friend  
A mile or two, and sees the journey's end,  
I straggle on too far ; long graces do  
But keep good stomachs off, that would fall to.

## *Against Fruition.*

**S**TAY here, fond youth, and ask no more, be wise :  
 Knowing too much long since lost paradise.  
 The virtuous joys thou hast, thou would'st should still  
 Last in their pride ; and would'st not take it ill,  
 If rudely from sweet dreams (and for a toy)  
 Thou wert wak't ? he wakes himself, that does enjoy.

Fruition adds no new wealth, but destroys,  
 And while it pleaseth much the palate, cloys ;  
 Who thinks he shall be happier for that,  
 As reasonably might hope he might grow fat  
 By eating to a surfeit ; this once pass'd,  
 What relishes ? even kisses lose their taste.

Urge not 'tis necessary, alas ! we know  
 The homeliest thing which mankind does is so ;  
 The world is of a vast extent, we see,  
 And must be peopled ; children there must be ;  
 So must bread too ; but since they are enough  
 Born to the drudgery, what need we plough ?

Women enjoyed (whate'er before t' have been)  
 Are like romances read, or sights once seen ;  
 Fruition's dull, and spoils the play much more,  
 Than if one read or knew the plot before ;  
 'Tis expectation makes a blessing dear,  
 Heaven were not heaven, if we knew what it were.

And as in prospects we are there pleased most,  
 Where something keeps the eye from being lost,  
 And leaves us room to guess : so here restraint  
 Holds up delight, that with excess would faint.  
 They who know all the wealth they have, are poor,  
 He's only rich that cannot tell his store.

---

## 1.

THERE never yet was woman made,  
 Nor shall, but to be cursed,  
 And O, that I, fond I, should first,  
 Of any lover  
 This truth at my own charge to other fools discover !

## 2.

You that have promised to yourselves  
 Propriety in love,  
 Know women's hearts like straw do move ;  
 And what we call  
 Their sympathy, is but love to jet in general.

## 3.

All mankind are alike to them ;  
 And though we iron find  
 That never with a loadstone joined,  
 'Tis not the iron's fault,  
 It is because near the loadstone yet it was never  
 brought.

## 4.

If where a gentle bee hath fallen,  
 And laboured to his power,

A new succeeds not to that flower,  
    But passes by,  
'Tis to be thought, the gallant elsewhere loads his  
    thigh.

## 5.

For still the flowers ready stand,  
    One buzzes round about,  
One lights, one tastes, gets in, gets out ;  
    All always use them,  
'Till all their sweets are gone, and all again refuse  
    them.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> In the old copies the song, "No, no, fair heretic," &c., follows here; but see it in the fourth act of "Aglaura."

*To my Friend Will. Davenant, upon  
his Poem of "Madagascar."<sup>1</sup>*

WHAT mighty princes poets are ? those things  
The great ones stick at, and our very kings  
Lay down, they venture on ; and with great ease  
Discover, conquer what and where they please.  
Some phlegmatic sea captain would have stay'd  
For money now, or victuals ; not have weighed  
Anchor without 'em ; thou (Will.) dost not stay  
So much as for a wind, but goest away,  
Land'st, view'st, the country ; fight'st, puts all to rout,  
Before another could be putting out !  
And now the news in town is—Davenant's come  
From Madagascar, fraught with laurel home ;  
And welcome, Will., for the first time ; but prithee,  
In thy next voyage bring the gold too with thee.

---

<sup>1</sup> This, as well as the following copy of verses, was prefixed to Davenant's Poems, 1638.

*To my Friend Will. Davenant, on  
his other Poems.*

THOU hast redeemed us, Will., and future times  
 Shall not account unto the age's crimes  
 Dearth of pure wit: since the great lord of it  
 (Donne) parted hence, no man has ever writ  
 So near him in's own way; I would commend  
 Particulars; but then, how should I end  
 Without a volume? every line of thine  
 Would ask (to praise it right) twenty of mine.

---

## I.

LOVE, Reason, Hate, did once bespeak  
 Three mates to play at barley-break;  
 Love Folly took; and Reason, Fancy;  
 And Hate consorts with Pride; so dance they.  
 Love coupled last, and so it fell,  
 That Love and Folly were in hell.

## 2.

They break, and Love would Reason meet,  
 But Hate was nimbler on her feet;

Fancy looks for Pride, and thither  
Hies, and they two hug together :  
Yet this new coupling still doth tell,  
That Love and Folly were in hell.

## 3.

The rest do break again, and Pride  
Hath now got Reason on her side ;  
Hate and Fancy meet, and stand  
Untouched by Love in Folly's hand ;  
Folly was dull, but Love ran well :  
So Love and Folly were in hell.

*Song.*

I.

I PRITHEE spare me, gentle boy,  
 Press me no more for that slight toy,  
 That foolish trifle of an heart ;  
 I swear it will not do its part,  
 Though thou dost thine, employ'st thy power and art.

2.

For through long custom it has known,  
 The little secrets, and is grown  
 Sullen and wise, will have its will,  
 And, like old hawks, pursues that still  
 That makes least sport, flies only where 't can kill.

3.

Some youth that has not made his story,  
 Will think, perchance, the pain 's the glory ;  
 And mannerly fit out love's feast ;  
 I shall be carving of the best,  
 Rudely call for the last course 'fore the rest.

4.

And, O, when once that course is pass'd,  
 How short a time the feast doth last !  
 Men rise away, and scarce say grace,  
 Or civilly once thank the face  
 That did invite, but seek another place.

*Upon my Lady Carlisle's walking in  
Hampton Court Garden.*

## DIALOGUE.

T[HOMAS] C[AREW]. J[OHN] S[UCKLING].

TOM.

DIDST thou not find the place inspired,  
And flowers, as if they had desired  
No other sun, start from their beds,  
And for a sight steal out their heads?  
Heardst thou not music when she talked?  
And didst not find that as she walked  
She threw rare perfumes all about,  
Such as bean-blossoms newly out,  
Or chafed spices give?—

J. S.

I must confess those perfumes, Tom,  
I did not smell; nor found that from  
Her passing by ought sprang up new;  
The flowers had all their birth from you;  
For I passed o'er the self-same walk,  
And did not find one single stalk  
Of any~~g~~ that was to bring  
This unknown after-after-spring.

## TOM.

Dull and insensible, couldst see  
A thing so near a Deity  
Move up and down, and feel no change?

## J. S.

None and so great were alike strange,  
I had my thoughts, but not your way;  
All are not born, sir, to the bay;  
Alas! Tom, I am flesh and blood,  
And was consulting how I could  
In spite of masks and hoods descry  
The parts denied unto the eye;  
I was undoing all she wore,  
And had she walked but one turn more,  
Eve in her first state had not been  
More naked, or more plainly seen.

## TOM.

'Twas well for thee she left the place,  
There is great danger in that face;  
But hadst thou viewed her leg and thigh,  
And upon that discovery  
Searched after parts that are more dear  
(As fancy seldom stops so near),  
No time or age had ever seen  
So lost a thing as thou hadst been.

*To Mr Davenant for Absence.*

WONDER not, if I stay not here,  
Hurt lovers, like to wounded deer,  
Must shift the place ; for standing still  
Leaves too much time to know our ill :  
Where there is a traitor eye,  
That lets in from th' enemy  
All that may supplant an heart,  
'Tis time the chief should use some art.  
Who parts the object from the sense,  
Wisely cuts off intelligence.  
O, how quickly men must die,  
Should they stand all love's battery !  
Persinda's eyes great mischief do,  
So do we know the cannon too ;  
But men are safe at distance still :  
Where they reach not, they cannot kill.  
Love is a fit, and soon is pass'd,  
Ill diet only makes it last ;  
Who is still looking, gazing ever,  
Drinks wine i'th' very height o'th' fever.

*Against Absence.*

MY whining lover, what needs all  
These vows of life monastical ?  
Despairs, retirements, jealousies,  
And subtle sealing up of eyes ?  
Come, come, be wise ; return again,  
A finger burnt's as great a pain ;  
And the same physic, self-same art  
Cures that, would cure a flaming heart,  
Wouldst thou, whilst yet the fire is in it,  
But hold it to the fire again ?  
If you, dear sir, the plague have got,  
What matter is't whether or not  
They let you in the same house lie,  
Or carry you abroad to die ?  
He whom the plague or love once takes,  
Every room a pest-house makes.  
Absence were good if't were but sense,  
That only holds th' intelligence :  
Pure love alone no hurt would do,  
But love is love and magic too ;  
Brings a mistress a thousand miles,  
And the sleight of looks beguiles,  
Makes her entertain thee there,  
And the same time your rival here ;  
And (O the devil) that she should  
Say finer things now than she would ;  
So nobly fancy doth supply  
What the dull sense lets fall and die.

Beauty, like man's old enemy, is known  
To tempt him most when he's alone :  
The air of some wild o'ergrown wood  
Or pathless grove is the boy's food.  
Return then back, and feed thine eye,  
Feed all thy senses, and feast high.  
Spare diet is the cause love lasts,  
For surfeits sooner kill than fasts.

*A Supplement of an imperfect Copy  
of Verses of Mr William Shake-  
spear's,<sup>1</sup> by the Author.*

## I.

ONE of her hands one of her cheeks lay under,  
Cosening the pillow of a lawful kiss,  
Which therefore swelled, and seemed to part asunder,  
As angry to be robbed of such a bliss !  
The one looked pale and for revenge did long,  
While t' other blushed, 'cause it had done the  
wrong.

## 2.

Out of the bed the other fair hand was  
On a green satin quilt, whose perfect white  
Looked like a daisy in a field of grass,  
And showed like unmelt snow unto the sight ;<sup>2</sup>      10  
There lay this pretty perdue, safe to keep  
The rest o'th' body that lay fast asleep.

## 3.

Her eyes (and therefore it was night), close laid,  
Strove to imprison beauty till the morn :

---

<sup>1</sup> The allusion is to a well-known passage in "Lucrece."

<sup>2</sup> Thus far Shakespeare.

But yet the doors were of such fine stuff made,  
 That it broke through, and showed itself in scorn,  
 Throwing a kind of light about the place,  
 Which turned to smiles still, as 't came near her  
 face.

## 4.

Her beams, which some dull men called hair, divided,  
 Part with her cheeks, part with her lips did sport.  
 But these, as rude, her breath put by still ; some  
 Wiselier downwards sought, but falling short,  
 Curled back in rings, and seemed to turn again  
 To bite the part so unkindly held them in.

1646

THAT none beguiled be by time's quick flowing,  
 Lovers have in their hearts a clock still going ;  
 For though time be nimble, his motions  
 Are quicker  
 And thicker  
 Where love hath his notions :

Hope is the mainspring on which moves desire,  
 And these do the less wheels, Fear, Joy, inspire ;  
 The balance is Thought, evermore  
 Clicking  
 And striking,  
 And ne'er giving o'er.

Occasion 's the hand which still 's moving round,  
 Till by it the critical hour may be found,  
 And when that falls out, it will strike  
 Kisses,  
 Strange blisses,  
 And what you best like.

## 1.

'TIS now since I sat down before  
That foolish fort, a heart ;  
(Time strangely spent) a year and more,  
And still I did my part :

## 2.

Made my approaches, from her hand  
Unto her lip did rise,  
And did already understand  
The language of her eyes.

## 3.

Proceeded on with no less art,  
My tongue was engineer ;  
I thought to undermine the heart  
By whispering in the ear.

## 4.

When this did nothing, I brought down  
Great cannon-oaths, and shot  
A thousand thousand to the town,  
And still it yielded not.

## 5.

I then resolved to starve the place  
By cutting off all kisses,  
Praying and gazing on her face,  
And all such little blisses.

## 6.

To draw her out, and from her strength  
I drew all batteries in :  
And brought myself to lie at length,  
As if no siege had been.

## 7.

When I had done what man could do,  
And thought the place mine own,  
The enemy lay quiet too,  
And smiled at all was done.

## 8.

I sent to know from whence and where  
These hopes and this relief?  
A spy informed; Honour was there,  
And did command in chief.

## 9.

March, march, quoth I, the word straight give,  
Let's lose no time, but leave her ;  
That giant upon air will live,  
And hold it out for ever.

## 10

To such a place our camp remove,  
As will no siege abide ;  
I hate a fool that starves her love,  
Only to feed her pride.

*Upon my Lord Brohall's<sup>1</sup> Wedding.*

DIALOGUE.

S[UCKLING.]      B[OND.]<sup>2</sup>

- S. IN bed, dull man,  
   When Love and Hymen's revels are begun,  
   And the church ceremonies past and done !
- B. Why, who 's gone mad to-day ?
- S. Dull heretic, thou wouldest say,  
   He that is gone to heaven 's gone astray ;  
   Brohall our gallant friend  
   Is gone to church, as martyrs to the fire :  
   Who marry, differ i' th' end,  
   Since both do take  
   The hardest way to what they most desire :  
   Nor stayed he till the formal priest had done,  
   But ere that part was finish'd, his begun :  
   Which did reveal  
   The haste and eagerness men have to seal,  
   That long to tell the money.  
   A sprig of willow in his hat he wore  
   (The loser's badge and liv'ry heretofore),  
   But now so ordered that it might be taken  
   By lookers on, forsaking as forsaken.

<sup>1</sup> [This poem was composed on the same occasion as the more celebrated "Ballad," the marriage of Suckling's friend, Roger Boyle, Lord Broghill.]

<sup>2</sup> [As to Jack Bond, see *Memoir*.]

And now and then  
 A careless smile broke forth, which spoke his mind,  
 And seem'd to say she might have been more kind.

When this (dear Jack) I saw,  
 Thought I,

How weak is lover's law?

The bonds made there (like gipsies' knots) with ease  
 Are fast and loose, as they that hold them please.

*B.* But was the fair nymph's praise or power less,  
 That led him captive now to happiness,  
 'Cause she did not a foreign aid despise,  
 But enter'd breaches made by others' eyes ?

*S.*              The gods forbid !

There must be some to shoot and batter down,  
 Others to force and to take in the town.

To hawks (good Jack) and harts  
 There may

Be sev'ral ways and arts ;  
 One watches them perchance, and makes them tame ;  
 Another, when they are ready, shows them game.

SIR,<sup>1</sup>

WHETHER these lines do find you out,  
 Putting or clearing of a doubt ;  
 (Whether predestination,  
 Or reconciling three in one,  
 Or the unriddling how men die,  
 And live at once eternally,  
 Now take you up) know 'tis decreed  
 You straight bestride the college-steed :

<sup>1</sup> This poetical epistle, which has considerable merit, is addressed by Suckling to his learned friend John Hales of Eton : he was one of the first disciples of Socinus in this kingdom.—*Note in ed. 1836.*

Leave Socinus and the schoolmen,  
(Which Jack Bond swears do but fool men),  
And come to town ; 'tis fit you show  
Yourself abroad, that men may know  
(What e'er some learned men have guess'd)  
That oracles are not yet ceas'd :  
There you shall find the wit and wine  
Flowing alike, and both divine :  
Dishes, with names not known in books,  
And less amongst the college-cooks,  
With sauce so pregnant that you need  
Not stay till hunger bids you feed.  
The sweat of learned Johnson's brain,  
And gentle Shakespeare's eas'er strain,  
A hackney-coach conveys you to,  
In spite of all that rain can do :  
And for your eighteenpence you sit  
The lord and judge of all fresh wit.  
News in one day as much w' have here,  
As serves all Windsor for a year,  
And which the carrier brings to you,  
After 't has here been found not true.  
Then think what company's design'd  
To meet you here, men so refin'd ;  
Their very common talk at board,  
Makes wise or mad a young court-lord,  
And makes him capable to be  
Umpire in 's father's company.  
Where no disputes nor forc'd defence  
Of a man's person for his sense  
Take up the time ; all strive to be  
Masters of truth, as victory :  
And where you come, I'd boldly swear  
A synod might as eas'ly err.

*Against Fruition.*

FIE upon hearts that burn with mutual fire :  
I hate two minds that breathe but one desire :  
Were I to curse th' unhallow'd sort of men,  
I'd wish them to love, and be lov'd again.  
Love's a camelion, that lives on mere air ;  
And surfeits when it comes to grosser fare :  
'Tis petty jealousies and little fears,  
Hopes join'd with doubts, and joys with April tears,  
That crowns our love with pleasures : these are gone  
When once we come to full fruition.  
Like waking in a morning, when all night  
Our fancy hath been fed with true delight.  
O, what a stroke 'twould be ! sure I should die,  
Should I but hear my mistress once say ay.  
That monster expectation feeds too high  
For any woman e'er to satisfy :  
And no brave spirit ever cared for that,  
Which in down beds with ease he could come at,  
She's but an honest whore that yields, although  
She be as cold as ice, as pure as snow :  
He that enjoys her hath no more to say,  
But keep us fasting, if you 'll have us pray.  
Then, fairest mistress, hold the power you have,  
By still denying what we still do crave :  
In keeping us in hopes strange things to see  
That never were, nor are, nor e'er shall be.

*A BALLAD**Upon a Wedding.<sup>1</sup>*

I TELL thee, Dick,<sup>2</sup> where I have been,  
 Where I the rarest things have seen ;  
 O, things without compare !  
 Such sights again cannot be found  
 In any place on English ground,  
 Be it at wake or fair.

At Charing-Cross, hard by the way,  
 Where we (thou know'st) do fell our hay,  
 There is a house with stairs ;

<sup>1</sup> This ballad was occasioned by the marriage of Roger Boyle, the first Earl of Orrery (then Lord Broghill), with Lady Margaret Howard, daughter to Theophilus, Earl of Suffolk. She was eminently beautiful. Suckling says in one of his letters, “I know you have but one way (to teach me to get into love), and will prescribe me now to look upon Mistress Howard.”—Note in edit. 1836. [At p. 8 of “Folly in Print, or a Book of Rymes,” 1667, attributed to John Raymond, occurs : “Three merry boys of Kent, to the tune of an old song beginning thus, ‘I rode from England into France,’ or to the tune of Sir John Suckling’s Ballad.”] In “Wit’s Recreations” among the Fancies and Fantasticks (edit. 1817, ii., 405), it is called a “Ballad,” and is accompanied by a woodcut of two ploughmen or rustics, the one narrating, the other listening—a total misconception of the author’s sense. See Hazlitt’s edit. of Lovelace, p. 32. In Patrick Carey’s “Trivia,” 1651, edit. 1820, is a poem to the tune of “I tell thee, Dick, that I have been.”]

<sup>2</sup> [See Lovelace’s Poems, 1864, p. 32.]

And there did I see coming down  
Such folk as are not in our town,  
Forty at least, in pairs.

Amongst the rest, one pest'lent fine  
(His beard no bigger though than thine)  
Walked on before the rest :  
Our landlord looks like nothing to him :  
The King (God bless him) 'twould undo him,  
Should he go still so drest.

At Course-a-Park, without all doubt,  
He should have first been taken out  
By all the maids i'th' town :  
Though lusty Roger there had been,  
Or little George upon the Green,  
Or Vincent of the Crown.

But wot you what ? the youth was going  
To make an end of all his wooing ;  
The parson for him stay'd :  
Yet by his leave (for all his haste)  
He did not so much wish all past  
(Perchance), as did the maid.

The maid (and thereby hangs a tale),  
For such a maid no Whitsun-ale  
Could ever yet produce :  
No grape, that's kindly ripe, could be  
So round, so plump, so soft as she,  
Nor half so full of juice.

Her finger was so small, the ring  
Would not stay on, which they did bring,  
It was too wide a peck :  
And to say truth (for out it must)  
It looked like the great collar (just)  
About our young colt's neck.

Her feet beneath her petticoat,  
 Like little mice, stole in and out,  
     As if they fear'd the light :  
 But O she dances such a way !  
 No sun upon an Easter-day  
     Is half so fine a sight.

He would have kissed her once or twice,  
 But she would not, she was so nice,  
     She would not do 't in sight,  
 And then she looked as who should say :  
 I will do what I list to-day,  
     And you shall do 't at night.

Her cheeks so rare a white was on,  
 No daisy makes comparison,  
     (Who sees them is undone),  
 For streaks of red were mingled there,  
 Such as are on a Catherine pear  
     (The side that's next the sun).

Her lips were red, and one was thin,  
 Compar'd to that was next her chin  
     (Some bee had stung it newly) ;  
 But (Dick) her eyes so guard her face ;  
 I durst no more upon them gaze  
     Than on the sun in July.

Her mouth so small, when she does speak,  
 Thou 'dst swear her teeth her words did break,  
     That they might passage get ;  
 But she so handled still the matter,  
 They came as good as ours, or better,  
     And are not spent a whit.

If wishing should be any sin,  
 The parson himself had guilty been  
     (She look'd that day so purely) ;

And did the youth so oft thefeat  
At night, as some did in conceit,  
It would have spoiled him surely.

Just in the nick the cook knocked thrice,  
And all the waiters in a trice  
His summons did obey ;  
Each serving-man, with dish in hand,  
Marched boldly up, like our trained band,  
Presented, and away.

When all the meat was on the table,  
What man of knife or teeth was able  
To stay to be intreated ?  
And this the very reason was,  
Before the parson could say grace,  
The company was seated.

The business of the kitchen 's great,  
For it is fit that men should eat ;  
Nor was it there denied :  
Passion o' me, how I run on !  
There 's that that would be thought upon  
(I trow) besides the bride.

Now hats fly off, and youths carouse ;  
Healths first go round, and then the house,  
The bride's came thick and thick :  
And when 'twas nam'd another's health,  
Perhaps he made it hers by stealth ;  
And who could help it, Dick ?

On the sudden up they rise and dance ;  
Then sit again and sigh, and glance :  
Then dance again and kiss :  
Thus several ways the time did pass,  
Whilst ev'ry woman wished her place,  
And every man wished his.

By this time all were stol'n aside  
To counsel and undress the bride ;

    But that he must not know :  
But yet 'twas thought he guess'd her mind,  
And did not mean to stay behind  
    Above an hour or so.

When in he came (Dick), there she lay  
Like new-fall'n snow melting away  
    ('Twas time, I trow, to part),  
Kisses were now the only stay,  
Which soon she gave, as who would say,  
    God b' w' ye, with all my heart.

But, just as heaven would have, to cross it,  
In came the bridesmaids with the posset :  
    The bridegroom ate in spite ;  
For had he left the women to 't,  
It would have cost two hours to do 't,  
    Which were too much that night.

At length the candle's out, and now  
All that they had not done, they do.  
    What that is, who can tell ?  
But I believe it was no more  
Than thou and I have done before  
    With Bridget and with Nell.

MY dearest rival, lest our love  
Should with eccentric motion move,  
Before it learn to go astray,  
We 'll teach and set it in a way,  
And such directions give unto 't,  
That it shall never wander foot.  
Know first then, we will serve as true  
For one poor smile, as we would do,  
If we had what our higher flame,  
Or our vainer wish could frame.  
Impossible shall be our hope ;  
And love shall only have his scope  
To join with fancy now and then,  
And think what reason would condemn :  
And on these grounds we 'll love as true,  
As if they were most sure t' ensue :  
And chastly for these things we 'll stay,  
As if to-morrow were the day.  
Meantime we two will teach our hearts  
In love's burdens bear their parts :  
Thou first shall sigh, and say she 's fair ;  
And I 'll still answer, past compare.  
Thou shalt set out each part o' th' face,  
While I extol each little grace ;  
Thou shalt be ravish'd at her wit ;  
And I, that she so governs it :  
Thou shalt like well that hand, that eye,  
That lip, that look, that majesty ;  
And in good language them adore :  
While I want words and do it more.  
Yea we will sit and sigh a while,  
And with soft thoughts some time beguile  
But straight again break out, and praise  
All we had done before, new ways.

Thus will we do till paler death  
Come with a warrant for our breath,  
And then whose fate shall be to die,  
First of us two, by legacy  
Shall all his store bequeath, and give  
His love to him that shall survive ;  
For no one stock can ever serve  
To love so much as she 'll deserve.

*Song.*

## I.

HONEST lover whatsoever,  
 If in all thy love there ever  
 Was one wav'ring thought, if thy flame  
 Were not still even, still the same :

Know this,  
 Thou lov'st amiss,  
 And to love true,  
 Thou must begin again, and love anew.

## 2.

If when she appears i'th' room,  
 Thou dost not quake, and are struck dumb,  
 And in striving this to cover,  
 Dost not speak thy words twice over,

Know this,  
 Thou lov'st amiss,  
 And to love true,  
 Thou must begin again, and love anew.

## 3.

If fondly thou dost not mistake,  
 And all defects for graces take,  
 Persuad'st thyself that jests are broken,  
 When she hath little or nothing spoken,

Know this,  
 Thou lov'st amiss,  
 And to love true,  
 Thou must begin again, and love anew.

## 4.

If when thou appearest to be within,  
 Thou lett'st not men ask and ask again ;  
 And when thou answerest, if it be,  
 To what was ask'd thee, properly,

Know this,  
 Thou lov'st amiss,  
 And to love true,  
 Thou must begin again, and love anew.

## 5.

If when thy stomach calls to eat,  
 Thou cutt'st not fingers 'stead of meat,  
 And with much gazing on her face  
 Dost not rise hungry from the place,

Know this,  
 Thou lov'st amiss,  
 And to love true,  
 Thou must begin again, and love anew.

## 6.

If by this thou dost discover  
 That thou art no perfect lover,  
 And desiring to love true,  
 Thou dost begin to love anew :

Know this,  
 Thou lov'st amiss,  
 And to love true,  
 Thou must begin again, and love anew.

*Upon Two Sisters.*

BELIEVE 'T young man, I can as eas'ly tell  
How many yards and inches 'tis to hell ;  
Unriddle all predestination,  
Or the nice points we now dispute upon,  
Had the three goddesses been just as fair—  
[As . . . and Aglaura are,]<sup>1</sup>  
It had not been so easily decided,  
And sure the apple must have been divided :  
It must, it must ; he's impudent, dares say  
Which is the handsomer till one's away.  
And it was necessary it should be so ;  
While Nature did foresee it, and did know,  
When she had fram'd the eldest, that each heart  
Must at the first sight feel the blind god's dart :  
And sure as can be, had she made but one,  
No plague had been more sure destruction ;  
For we had lik'd, lov'd, burnt to ashes too,  
In half the time that we are choosing now :  
Variety and equal objects make  
The busy eye still doubtful which to take ;  
This lip, this hand, this foot, this eye, this face,  
The other's body, gesture, or her grace ;  
And whilst we thus dispute which of the two,  
We unresolv'd go out, and nothing do.  
He sure is happiest that has hopes of either,  
Next him is he that sees them both together.

---

<sup>1</sup> [A line, here supplied by conjecture, is wanting in the editions.]

*To his Rival.*

NOW we have taught our love to know,  
That it must creep where 't cannot go,  
And be for once content to live,  
Since here it cannot have to thrive ;  
It will not be amiss to inquire  
What fuel should maintain this fire :  
For fires do either flame too high,  
Or where they cannot flame they die.  
First then (my half but better heart)  
Know this must wholly be her part ;  
(For thou and I like clocks are wound  
Up to the height, and must move round)  
She then, by still denying what  
We fondly crave, shall such a rate  
Set on each trifle, that a kiss  
Shall come to be the utmost bliss.  
Where sparks and fire do meet with tinder,  
Those sparks mere fire will still engender :  
To make this good, no debt shall be  
From service or fidelity ;  
For she shall ever pay that score,  
By only bidding us do more :  
So (though she still a niggard be)  
In gracing, where none's due, she's free :  
The favours she shall cast on us,  
(Lest we should grow presumptuous)  
Shall not with too much love be shown,  
Nor yet the common way still done ;

But ev'ry smile and little glance  
Shall look half lent, and half by chance :  
The ribbon, fan, or muff that she  
Would should be kept by thee or me,  
Should not be given before too many,  
But neither thrown to 's, when there 's any ;  
So that herself should doubtful be  
Whether 'twere fortune flung 't, or she.  
She shall not like the thing we do  
Sometimes, and yet shall like it too ;  
Nor any notice take at all  
Of what, we gone, she would extol :  
Love she shall feed, but fear to nourish,  
For where fear is, love cannot flourish ;  
Yet live it must, nay must and shall,  
While Desdemona is at all :  
But when she 's gone, then love shall die,  
And in her grave buried lie.

## *Farewell to Love.*

I.

WELL—shadowed landskip, fare ye well :  
 How I have loved you, none can tell,  
 At least so well  
 As he that now hates more  
 Than e'er he loved before.

2.

But, my dear nothings, take your leave,  
 No longer must you me deceive,  
 Since I perceive  
 All the deceit, and know  
 Whence the mistake did grow.

3.

As he, whose quicker eye doth trace  
 A false star shot to a mark'd place,  
 Does run apace,  
 And thinking it to catch,  
 A jelly up does snatch.

4.

So our dull souls tasting delight  
 Far off, by sense and appetite  
 Think that is right  
 And real good ; when yet  
 'Tis but the counterfeit.

## 5.

O, how I glory now, that I  
 Have made this new discovery !  
     Each wanton eye  
 Inflamed before : no more  
 Will I increase that score.

## 6.

If I gaze now, 'tis but to see  
 What manner of death's-head 'twill be,  
     When it is free  
 From that fresh upper skin,  
 The gazer's joy and sin.

## 7.

The gum and glist'ning which with art  
 And studied method in each part  
     Hangs down the hair,  
 Looks (just) as if that day  
 Snails there had crawled the hay.

## 8.

The locks, that curl'd o'er each ear be,  
 Hang like two master-worms to me,  
     That (as we see)  
 Have tasted to the rest  
 Two holes, where they lik 't best.

## 9.

A quick corse, me-think, I spy  
 In every woman ; and mine eye,  
     At passing by,  
 Checks, and is troubled, just  
 As if it rose from dust.

## 10.

They mortify, not heighten me :  
These of my sins the glasses be :  
    And here I see,  
How I have loved before,  
    And so I love no more.

## *The Invocation.*

YE juster powers of Love and Fate, *a*  
 Give me the reason why *a*  
 A lover cross'd *e*  
 And all hopes lost *e*  
 May not have leave to die. *b*

It is but just, and Love needs must *a*  
 Confess it is his part, *e*  
 When she doth spy *f*  
 One wounded lie, *f*  
 To pierce the other's heart. *e*

But yet if he so cruel be  
 To have one breast to hate,  
 If I must live  
 And thus survive,  
 How far more cruel's Fate ?

In this same state I find too late  
 I am ; and here's the grief :  
 Cupid can cure,  
 Death heal, I'm sure,  
 Yet neither sends relief.

To live or die, beg only I :  
 Just powers, some end me give ;  
 And traitor-like  
 Thus force me not  
 Without a heart to live.

*[A Poem, with the Answer.]*

---

SIR J. S.

I.

OUT upon it, I have loved  
Three whole days together;  
And am like to love three more,  
If it prove fair weather.

2.

Time shall moult away his wings,  
Ere he shall discover  
In the whole wide world again  
Such a constant lover.

3.

But the spite on 't is, no praise  
Is due at all to me :  
Love with me had made no stays,  
Had it any been but she.

4.

Had it any been but she,  
And that very face,  
There had been at least ere this  
A dozen dozen in her place.

## SIR TOBY MATTHEWS.

I.

SAY, but did you love so long ?  
In troth, I needs must blame you :  
Passion did your judgment wrong,  
Or want of reason shame you.

2.

Truth, time's fair and witty daughter,  
Shortly shall discover,  
Y' are a subject fit for laughter,  
And more fool than lover.

3.

But I grant you merit praise  
For your constant folly :  
Since you doted three whole days,  
Were you not melancholy ?

4.

She to whom you prov'd so true,  
And that very very face,  
Puts each minute such as you  
A dozen dozen to disgrace.

*Love turned to Hatred.*

I WILL not love one minute more, I swear,  
No, not a minute ; not a sigh or tear  
Thou gett'st from me, or one kind look again,  
Though thou shouldst court me to't and wouldest begin.  
I will not think of thee, but as men do  
Of debts and sins, and then I'll curse thee too :  
For thy sake woman shall be now to me  
Less welcome, than at midnight ghosts shall be :  
I'll hate so perfectly, that it shall be  
Treason to love that man that loves a she ;  
Nay, I will hate the very good, I swear,  
That's in thy sex, because it doth lie there ;  
Their very virtue, grace, discourse and wit,  
And all for thee ; what, wilt thou love me yet ?

*The careless Lover.*

NEVER believe me, if I love,  
Or know what 'tis, or mean to prove ;  
And yet in faith I lie, I do,  
And she's extremely handsome too :  
She's fair, she's wondrous fair,  
But I care not who know it,  
Ere I'll die for love, I'll fairly forego it.

This heat of hope, or cold of fear,  
My foolish heart could never bear :  
One sigh imprisoned ruins more  
Than earthquakes have done heretofore :  
She's fair, &c.

When I am hungry, I do eat,  
And cut no fingers 'stead of meat ;  
Nor with much gazing on her face  
Do e'er rise hungry from the place :  
She's fair, &c.

A gentle round fill'd to the brink  
To this and t' other friend I drink ;  
And when 'tis nam'd another's health,  
I never make it hers by stealth :  
She's fair, &c.

Blackfriars to me, and old Whitehall,  
Is even as much as is the fall

Of fountains on a pathless grove,  
And nourishes as much my love :  
She 's fair, &c.

I visit, talk, do business, play,  
And for a need laugh out a day :  
Who does not thus in Cupid's school,  
He makes not love, but plays the fool :  
She 's fair, &c.

*Love and Debt alike troublesome.*

THIS one request I make to him that sits the clouds above,  
That I were freely out of debt, as I am out of love.  
Then for to dance, to drink and sing, I should be very willing,  
I should not owe one lass a kiss, nor ne'er a knave a shilling.  
'Tis only being in love and debt that breaks us of our rest ;  
And he that is quite out of both, of all the world is blest :  
He sees the golden age, wherein all things were free and common ;  
He eats, he drinks, he takes his rest, he fears no man or woman.  
Though Cræsus compassed great wealth, yet he still craved more,  
He was as needy a beggar still, as goes from door to door.  
Though Ovid were a merry man, love ever kept him sad ;  
He was as far from happiness, as one that is stark mad.  
Our merchant he in goods is rich, and full of gold and treasure ;  
But when he thinks upon his debts, that thought destroys his pleasure.

Our courtier thinks that he's preferred, whom every  
man envies ;  
When love so rumbles in his pate, no sleep comes in  
his eyes.  
Our gallant's case is worst of all, he lies so just be-  
twixt them ;  
For he's in love, and he's in debt, and knows not  
which most vex' th him.  
But he that can eat beef, and feed on bread which is  
so brown  
May satisfy his appetite, and owe no man a crown :  
And he that is content with lasses clothed in plain  
woollen,  
May cool his heat in every place, he need not to be  
sullen,  
Nor sigh for love of lady fair ; for this each wise man  
knows  
As good stuff under flannel lies, as under silken clothes.

*Song.*

I PRITHEE send me back my heart,  
Since I cannot have thine :  
For if from yours you will not part,  
Why then shouldst thou have mine ?

Yet now I think on 't, let it lie,  
To find it were in vain,  
For th' hast a thief in either eye  
Would steal it back again.

Why should two hearts in one breast lie,  
And yet not lodge together ?  
O love, where is thy sympathy,  
If thus our breasts thou sever ?

But love is such a mystery,  
I cannot find it out :  
For when I think I 'm best resolv'd,  
I then am in most doubt.

Then farewell care, and farewell woe,  
I will no longer pine :  
For I 'll believe I have her heart,  
As much as she hath mine.

*To a Lady that forbad to love  
before Company.<sup>1</sup>*

WHAT ! no more favours ? Not a ribbon more,  
Not fan nor muff to hold as heretofore ?  
Must all the little blisses then be left,  
And what was once love's gift, become our theft ?  
May we not look ourselves into a trance,  
Teach our souls parley at our eyes, not glance,  
Not touch the hand, not by soft wringing there  
Whisper a love that only yes can hear ?  
Not free a sigh, a sigh that's there for you ?  
Dear, must I love you, and not love you too ?  
Be wise, nice, fair ; for sooner shall they trace  
The feather'd choristers from place to place,  
By prints they make in th' air, and sooner say  
By what right line the last star made his way,  
That fled from heaven to earth, than guess to know  
How our loves first did spring, or how they grow.  
Love is all spirit : fairies sooner may  
Be taken tardy, when they night-tricks play,  
Than we, we are too dull and lumpish rather,  
Would they could find us both in bed together !

---

<sup>1</sup> Cibber, in his "Lives of the Poets," considers these as Suckling's best lines. I cannot coincide with him in this criticism.—Note in edition 1836.

*The guiltless Inconstant.*

MY first love, whom all beauties did adorn,  
Firing my heart, suppress'd it with her scorn ;  
Since like the tinder in my breast it lies,  
By every sparkle made a sacrifice.  
Each wanton eye can kindle my desire,  
And that is free to all which was entire ;  
Desiring more by the desire I lost,  
As those that in consumptions linger most.  
And now my wand'ring thoughts are not confin'd  
Unto one woman, but to womankind :  
This for her shape I love, that for her face,  
This for her gesture, or some other grace :  
And where that none of all these things I find,  
I choose her by the kernel, not the rind :  
And so I hope since my first hope is gone,  
To find in many what I lost in one ;  
And like to merchants after some great loss,  
Trade by retail, that cannot do in gross.  
The fault is hers that made me go astray,  
He needs must wander, that hath lost his way :  
Guiltless I am ; she doth this change provoke,  
And made that charcoal, which to her was oak,  
And as a looking-glass from the aspect  
Whilst it is whole, doth but one face reflect ;  
But being crack'd or broken, there are grown  
Many less faces, where there was but one :  
So love unto my heart did first prefer  
Her image, and there placed none but her ;  
But since 't was broke and martyr'd by her scorn,  
Many less faces in her place are born.

## *Love's Representation.*

LEANING her head upon my breast,  
 There on love's bed she lay to rest ;  
 My panting heart rock'd her asleep,  
 My heedful eyes the watch did keep ;  
 Then love by me being harbour'd there,  
 In<sup>1</sup> hope to be his harbinger,  
 Desire his rival kept the door ;  
 For this of him I begg'd no more,  
 But that, our mistress to entertain,  
 Some pretty fancy he would frame,  
 And represent it in a dream,  
 Of which myself should give the theme.  
 Then first these thoughts I bid him show,  
 Which only he and I did know,  
 Arrayed in duty and respect,  
 And not in fancies that reflect,  
 Then those of value next present,  
 Approv'd by all the world's consent ;  
 But to distinguish mine asunder,  
 Apparell'd they must be in wonder.  
 Such a device then I would have,  
 As service, not reward, should crave,  
 Attir'd in spotless innocence,  
 Not self-respect, nor no pretence :  
 Then such a faith I would have shown,  
 As heretofore was never known.  
 Cloth'd with a constant clear intent,  
 Professing always as it meant.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copy, No.]

And if love no such garments have,  
My mind a wardrobe is so brave,  
That there sufficient he may see  
To clothe Impossibility.  
Then beamy fetters he shall find,  
By admiration subtly twin'd,  
That will keep fast the wanton'st thought,  
That e'er imagination wrought :  
There he shall find of joy a chain,  
Framed by despair of her disdain,  
So curiously that it can't tie  
The smallest hopes that thoughts now spy.  
There acts, as glorious as the sun,  
Are by her veneration spun,  
In one of which I would have brought  
A pure, unspotted abstract thought.  
Considering her as she is good,  
Not in her frame of flesh and blood.  
These atoms then, all in her sight,  
I bad him join, that so he might  
Discern between true love's creation,  
And that love's form that's now in fashion.  
Love granting unto my request  
Began to labour in my breast ;  
But with this motion he did make,  
It heav'd so high that she did wake.  
Blush'd at the favour she had done,  
Then smil'd, and then away did run.

*Song.*

THE crafty boy that had full oft assay'd  
To pierce my stubborn and resisting breast,  
But still the bluntness of his darts betrayed,  
Resolv'd at last of setting up his rest.  
Either my wild unruly heart to tame,  
Or quit his godhead, and his bow disclaim.

So all his lovely looks, his pleasing fires ;  
All his sweet motions, all his taking smiles ;  
All that awakes, all that inflames desires,  
All that by sweet commands, all that beguiles,  
He does into one pair of eyes convey,  
And there begs leave that he himself may stay.

And there he brings me, where his ambush lay,  
Secure and careless, to a stranger land ;  
And never warning me, which was foul play,  
Does make me close by all this beauty stand.  
Where first struck dead, I did at last recover,  
To know that I might only live to love her.

So I 'll be sworn I do, and do confess,  
The blind lad's power, whilst he inhabits there ;  
But I 'll be even with him nevertheless,  
If e'er I chance to meet with him elsewhere.  
If other eyes invite the boy to tarry,  
I 'll fly to hers as to a sanctuary.

*Upon the Black Spots worn by my  
Lady D. E.<sup>1</sup>*

MADAM,  
I KNOW your heart cannot so guilty be,  
That you should wear those spots for vanity ;  
Or as your beauty's trophies, put on one  
For every murder which your eyes have done :  
No, they're your mourning-weeds for hearts forlorn  
Which, though you must not love, you could not  
scorn ;  
To whom since cruel honour doth deny  
Those joys could only cure their misery ;  
Yet you this noble way to grace them found,  
Whilst thus our grief their martyrdom hath crown'd.  
Of which take heed you prove not prodigal,  
For if to every common funeral,  
By your eyes martyr'd, such grace were allow'd,  
Your face would wear not patches, but a cloud.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Could this be the Dorothy Enion, who married Stanley the poet? See Hammond's Poems, 1655, edition 1816, p. 34, and Lovelace's Poems, edition 1864, pp. 227-8.]

*Song.*

If you refuse me once, and think again,  
I will complain.

You are deceiv'd, love is no work of art,  
It must be got and born,  
Not made and worn,  
By every one that hath a heart.

Or do you think they more than once can die,  
Whom you deny.

Who tell you of a thousand deaths a day,  
Like the old poets feign  
And tell the pain.

They met, but in the common way.

Or do you think 't too soon to yield,  
And quit the field.

Nor is that right, they yield that first entreat ;  
Once one may crave for love,  
But more would prove

This heart too little, that too great.

O, that I were all soul, that I might prove  
For you as fit a love,

As you are for an angel ; for I know,  
None but pure spirits are fit loves for you.

You are all ethereal, there is no dross,  
Nor any part that's gross.

Your coarsest part is like a curious lawn,  
The vestal relics for a covering drawn.

Your other parts, part of the purest fire  
 That e'er Heaven did inspire;  
 Makes every thought that is refined by it,  
 A quintessence of goodness and of wit.

Thus have your raptures reach'd to that degree  
 In Love's philosophy,  
 That you can figure to yourself a fire  
 Void of all heat, a love without desire.

Nor in Divinity do you go less :  
 You think, and you profess,  
 That souls may have a plenitude of joy,  
 Although their bodies meet not to employ.

But I must needs confess, I do not find  
 The motions of my mind  
 So purified as yet, but at the best  
 My body claims in them an interest.

I hold that perfect joy makes all our parts  
 As joyful as our hearts.  
 Our senses tell us, if we please not them,  
 Our love is but a dotage or a dream.

How shall we then agree ? you may descend,  
 But will not, to my end.  
 I fain would tune my fancy to your key,  
 But cannot reach to that obstructed way.

There rests but this, that whilst we sorrow here,  
 Our bodies may draw near :  
 And when no more their joys they can extend,  
 Then let our souls begin where they did end.

*Proffer'd Love rejected.*

IT is not four years ago,  
I offered forty crowns  
To lie with her a night or so :  
She answer'd me in frowns.

Not two years since, she meeting me  
Did whisper in my ear,  
That she would at my service be,  
If I contented were.

I told her I was cold as snow,  
And had no great desire ;  
But shoud be well content to go  
To twenty, but no higher.

Some three months since or thereabout,  
She that so coy had been,  
Bethought herself and found me out,  
And was content to sin.

I smil'd at that, and told her I  
Did think it something late,  
And that I 'd not repentance buy  
At above half the rate.

This present morning early she  
Forsooth came to my bed,  
And *gratis* there she offered me  
Her high-priz'd maidenhead.

I told her that I thought it then  
Far dearer than I did,  
When I at first the forty crowns  
For one night's lodging bid.

*Desdain.*

I.

A QUOY servent tant d'artifices  
 Et servens aux vents iettez,  
 Si vos amours et vos services  
 Me sont des importunitez.

2.

L'amour a d'autres vœux m'appelle ;  
 N'tendez jamais rien de moy,  
 Ne pensez nous rendre infidele,  
 A mi tesmoignant vostre foy.

3.

L'amant qui mon amour possede  
 Est trop plein de perfection,  
 Et doublement il vous excede  
 De merit et d'affection.

4.

Je ne puis estre refroidie,  
 Ni rompre un cordage si doux,  
 Ni le rompre sans perfidie,  
 Ni d'estre perfide pour vous.

5.

Vos attentes sont toutes en vain,  
 Le vous dire est vous obligier,  
 Pour vous faire espargner vos peines  
 Des vœux et du temps mesnager.

*Englised thus by the Author :*

## I.

TO what end serve the promises  
 And oaths lost in the air,  
 Since all your proffer'd services  
 To me but tortures are?

## 2.

Another now enjoys my love,  
 Set you your heart at rest:  
 Think not me from my faith to move,  
 Because you faith protest.

## 3.

The man that does possess my heart,  
 Has twice as much perfection,  
 And does excel you in desert,  
 As much as in affection.

## 4.

I cannot break so sweet a bond,  
 Unless I prove untrue:  
 Nor can I ever be so fond,  
 To prove untrue for you.

## 5.

Your attempts are but in vain  
 (To tell you is a favour):  
 For things that may be, rack your brain;  
 Then lose not thus your labour.

# *Lutea<sup>1</sup> Allison :*

*SI SOLA ES, NULLA ES.*

THOUGH you Diana-like have liv'd still chaste,  
 Yet must you not (fair) die a maid at last :  
 The roses on your cheeks were never made  
 To bless the eye alone, and so to fade ;  
 Nor had the cherries on your lips their being  
 To please no other sense than that of seeing :  
 You were not made to look on, though that be  
 A bliss too great for poor mortality :  
 In that alone those rarer parts you have,  
 To better uses sure wise nature gave  
 Than that you put them to ; to love, to wed :  
 For Hymen's rights and for the marriage-bed  
 You were ordained, and not to lie alone ;  
 One is no number, till that two be one.  
 To keep a maidenhead but till fifteen,  
 Is worse than murder, and a greater sin  
 Than to have lost it in the lawful sheets  
 With one that should want skill to reap those sweets :  
 But not to lose 't at all—by Venus, this,  
 And by her son, inexpiable is ;  
 And should each female guilty be o'th' crime,  
 The world would have its end before its time.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Query, *Lucia.*]

## *Perjury Excused.*

A LAS, it is too late ! I can no more  
 Love now than I have loved before :  
 My Flora, 'tis my fate, not I ;  
 And what you call contempt, is destiny.  
 I am no monster, sure, I cannot show  
 Two hearts ; one I already owe ;  
 And I have bound myself with oaths, and vowed  
 Oftener I fear than Heaven hath e'er allowed,  
 That faces now should work no more on me,  
 Than if they could not charm, or I not see.  
 And shall I break them ? shall I think you can  
 Love, if I could, so foul a perjur'd man ?  
 O no, 'tis equally impossible that I  
 Should love again, or you love perjury.

---

## *A Song.*

H AST thou seen the down in the air,  
     When wanton blasts have tossed it ?  
 Or the ship on the sea,  
     When ruder winds have crossed it ?  
 Hast thou marked the crocodile's weeping,  
     Or the fox's sleeping ?  
 Or hast viewed the peacock in his pride,  
     Or the dove by his bride,  
         When he courts for his lechery ?  
 O, so fickle, O, so vain, O, so false, so false is she !

*Upon T[homas] C[arew] having  
the P.*

TROTH, Tom, I must confess I much admire  
Thy water should find passage through the fire ;  
For fire and water never could agree,  
These now by nature have some sympathy :  
Sure then his way he forces, for all know  
The French ne'er grants a passage to his foe.  
If it be so, his valour I must praise,  
That being weaker, yet can force his ways ;  
And wish that to his valour he had strength,  
That he might drive the fire quite out at length ;  
For, troth, as yet the fire gets the day,  
For evermore the water runs away.

---

*Upon the First Sight of my  
Lady Seymour.*

WONDER not much, if thus amazed I look,  
Since I saw you, I have been planet-struck :  
A beauty and so rare I did descry,  
As, should I set her forth, you all, as I,  
Would lose your hearts ; for he that can  
Know her and live, he must be more than man.  
An apparition of so sweet a creature,  
That, credit me, she had not any feature  
That did not speak her angel. But no more  
Such heavenly things as these we must adore,  
Nor prattle of ; lest, when we do but touch,  
Or strive to know, we wrong her too—too much.

*Upon L[ady] M [iddlesex] Weeping.*

WHOEVER was the cause your tears were shed,  
May these my curses light upon his head :  
May he be first in love, and let it be  
With a most known and black deformity,  
Nay, far surpass all witches that have been,  
Since our first parents taught us how to sin !  
Then let this hag be coy, and he run mad  
For that which no man else would e'er have had ;  
And in this fit may he commit the thing  
May him impenitent to the gallows bring !  
Then might he for one tear his pardon have,  
But want that single grief his life to save !  
And being dead, may he at heaven venter,  
But for the guilt of this one fact ne'er enter.

*The Deformed Mistress.*

I KNOW there are some fools that care  
Not for the body, so the face be fair ;  
Some others, too, that in a female creature  
Respect not beauty, but a comely feature ;  
And others, too, that for those parts in sight  
Care not so much, so that the rest be right.  
Each man his humour hath, and faith 'tis mine  
To love that woman which I now define.  
First I would have her wainscot-foot and hand  
More wrinkled far than any plaited band,  
That in those furrows, if I'd take the pains,  
I might both sow and reap all sorts of grains :  
Her nose I'd have a foot long, not above,  
With pimples embroidered, for those I love ;  
And at the end a comely pearl of snot,  
Considering whether it should fall or not:  
Provided, next, that half her teeth be out,  
Nor do I care much if her pretty snout  
Meet with her furrowed chin, and both together  
Hem in her lips, as dry as good white leather.  
One wall-eye she shall have ; for that's a sign  
In other beasts the best, why not in mine ?  
Her neck I'll have to be pure jet at least,  
With yellow spots enamelled ; and her breast,  
Like a grasshopper's wing, both thin and lean,  
Not to be touched for dirt, unless swept clean.  
As for her belly, 'tis no matter so  
There be a belly, and a c—— also.

Yet if you will, let it be something high,  
And always let there be a timpany—  
But soft! where am I now? here I should stride,  
Lest I fall in, the place must be so wide,  
And pass unto her thighs, which shall be just  
Like to an ant's that's scraping in the dust.  
Into her legs I'd have love's issue fall,  
And all her calf into a gouty small:  
Her feet both thick and eagle-like displayed,  
The symptoms of a comely, handsome maid.  
As for her parts behind, I ask no more,  
If they but answer those that are before,  
I have my utmost wish; and having so,  
Judge whether I am happy—yea or no.

*NON EST MORTALE QUOD OPTO.*

*Upon Mrs A. L.<sup>1</sup>*

THOU think'st I flatter, when thy praise I tell,  
But thou dost all hyperboles excel ;  
For I am sure thou art no mortal creature,  
But a divine one, throned in human feature.  
Thy piety is such, that heaven by merit,  
If ever any did, thou shouldst inherit.  
Thy modesty is such, that hadst thou been  
Tempted as Eve, thou wouldst have shunned her sin.  
So lovely fair thou art, that sure Dame Nature  
Meant thee the pattern of the female creature.  
Besides all this, thy flowing wit is such,  
That were it not in thee, it had been too much  
For womankind : should envy look thee o'er,  
It would confess thus much, if not much more.  
I love thee well, yet wish some bad in thee,  
For sure I am thou art too good for me.

---

<sup>1</sup> [See Lovelace's Poems, edit. 1864, pp. 126, 127.]

*His Dream.*

ON a still, silent night, scarce could I number  
One of the clock, but that a golden slumber  
Had locked my senses fast, and carried me  
Into a world of blest felicity,  
I know not how : first to a garden, where  
The apricot, the cherry, and the pear,  
The strawberry and plum, were fairer far  
Than that eye-pleasing fruit that caused the jar  
Betwixt the goddesses, and tempted more  
Than fair Atlanta's ball, though gilded o'er.  
I gazed awhile on these, and presently  
A silver stream ran softly gliding by,  
Upon whose banks, lilies more white than snow,  
New fallen from heaven, with violets mixed, did grow ;  
Whose scent so chafed the neighbour-air, that you  
Would softly swear that Arabic spices grew  
Not far from thence, or that the place had been  
With musk prepared, to entertain Love's queen.  
Whilst I admired, the river passed away,  
And up a grove did spring, green as in May  
When April had been moist ; upon whose bushes  
The pretty robins, nightingales and thrushes,  
Warbled their notes so sweetly, that my ears  
Did judge at least the music of the spheres.  
But here my gentle dream conveyed me  
Into the place where I most longed to see,  
My mistress' bed ; who, some few blushes past  
And smiling frowns, contented was at last  
To let me touch her neck ; I, not content  
With that, slipped to her breast, thence lower went,  
And then—I awaked.

*Upon A. M.*

YIELD all, my love ; but be withal as coy,  
As if thou knew'st not how to sport and toy :  
The fort resigned with ease, men cowards prove  
And lazy grow. Let me besiege my love,  
Let me despair at least three times a day,  
And take repulses upon each essay ;  
If I but ask a kiss, straight blush as red  
As if I tempted for thy maidenhead :  
Contract thy smiles, if that they go too far,  
And let thy frowns be such as threaten war.  
That face which nature sure never intended  
Should e'er be marred, because't could ne'er be mended.  
Take no corruption from thy grandame Eve ;  
Rather want faith to save thee, than believe  
Too soon ; for credit me 'tis true,  
Men most of all enjoy, when least they do.

*A Candle.*

THERE is a thing which in the light  
Is seldom used, but in the night  
It serves the maiden female crew,  
The ladies, and the good-wives too.  
They use to take it in their hand,  
And then it will uprightly stand ;  
And to a hole they it apply,  
Where by its goodwill it would die ;  
It spends, goes out, and still within  
It leaves its moisture thick and thin.

---

*The Metamorphosis.*

THE little boy, to show his might and power,  
Turn'd Io to a cow, Narcissus to a flower ;  
Transformed Apollo to a homely swain,  
And Jove himself into a golden rain.  
These shapes were tolerable, but by the mass  
He 's metamorphosed me into an ass.

*To B. C.*

WHEN first, fair mistress, I did see your face,  
I brought, but carried no eyes from the place ;  
And since that time God Cupid hath me led,  
In hope that once I shall enjoy your bed.  
But I despair ; for now, alas, I find,  
Too late for me, the blind does lead the blind.

---

*Upon Sir John Laurence's bringing  
Water over the Hills to my L.  
Middlesex's House at Witten.*

AND is the water come ? sure 't cannot be,  
It runs too much against philosophy ;  
For heavy bodies to the centre bend,  
Light bodies only naturally ascend.  
How comes this then to pass ? The good knight's  
skill  
Could nothing do without the water's will :  
Then 'twas the water's love that made it flow,  
For love will creep where well it cannot go.

*A Barber.*

I AM a barber and, I'd have you know,  
A shaver too, sometimes no mad one though :  
The reason why you see me now thus bare,  
Is 'cause I always trade against the hair.  
But yet I keep a state ; who comes to me,  
Whosoe'er he is, he must uncover'd be.  
When I'm at work, I'm bound to find discourse,  
To no great purpose, of great Sweden's force,  
Of Witel, and the Bourse, and what 'twill cost  
To get that back which was this summer lost.  
So fall to praising of his Lordship's hair :  
Ne'er so deform'd, I swear 'tis *sans* compare.  
I tell him that the King's doth sit no fuller,  
And yet his is not half so good a colour ;  
Then reach a pleasing glass, that's made to lie,  
Like to its master, most notoriously ;  
And if he must his mistress see that day,  
I with a powder send him straight away.

*A Soldier.*

I AM a man of war and might,  
And know thus much, that I can fight,  
Whether I am i' th' wrong or right,  
                        Devoutly.

No woman under heaven I fear,  
New oaths I can exactly swear,  
And forty healths my brain will bear  
                        Most stoutly.

I cannot speak, but I can do  
As much as any of our crew ;  
And if you doubt it, some of you  
                        May prove me.

I dare be bold thus much to say,  
If that my bullets do but play,  
You would be hurt so night and day,  
                        Yet love me.

*To my Lady E. C. at her going out  
of England.*

I MUST confess, when I did part from you,  
I could not force an artificial dew  
Upon my cheeks, nor with a gilded phrase  
Express how many hundred several ways  
My heart was tortur'd, nor with arms across  
In discontented garbs set forth my loss :  
Such loud expressions many times do come  
From lightest hearts : great griefs are always dumb.  
The shallow rivers roar, the deep are still.  
Numbers of painted words may show much skill,  
But little anguish and a cloudy face  
Is oft put on, to serve both time and place :  
The blazing wood may to the eye seem great,  
But 'tis the fire rak'd up that has the heat,  
And keeps it long. True sorrow's like to wine,  
That which is good, does never need a sign.  
My eyes were channels far too small to be  
Conveyers of such floods of misery.  
And so pray think, or if you'd entertain  
A thought more charitable, suppose some strain  
Of sad repentance had, not long before,  
Quite emptied for my sins that watery store.  
So shall you him oblige that still will be  
Your servant to his best ability.

## *A Pedlar of Smallwares.*

**A** PEDLAR I am, that take great care  
And mickle pains for to sell smallware :  
I had need do so, when women do buy,  
That in smallwares trade so unwillingly.

L. W.

A looking-glass, wilt please you, madam, buy ?  
A rare one 'tis indeed, for in it I  
Can show what all the world besides can't do,  
A face like to your own, so fair, so true.

L. E.

For you a girdle, madam ; but I doubt me  
Nature hath order'd there's no waist about ye ;  
Pray, therefore, be but pleas'd to search my pack,  
There's no ware that I have that you shall lack.

L. E. L. M.

You ladies, want you pins ? if that you do,  
I have those will enter, and that stify too :  
It's time you choose, in troth ; you will bemoan  
Too late your tarrying, when my pack's once gone.

L. B. L. A.

As for you, ladies, there are those behind  
Whose ware perchance may better take your mind :  
One cannot please ye all ; the pedlar will draw back,  
And wish against himself, that you may have the knack.

*An Answer to some Verses made  
in his Praise.*

THE ancient poets and their learned rhymes  
We still admire in these our later times,  
And celebrate their fames. Thus, though they die,  
Their names can never taste mortality :  
Blind Homer's muse and Virgil's stately verse,  
While any live, shall never need a hearse.  
Since then to these such praise was justly due  
For what they did, what shall be said to you ?  
These had their helps ; they wrote of gods and kings,  
Of temples, battles, and of such gallant things :  
But you of nothing ; how could you have writ,  
Had you but chose a subject to your wit ?  
To praise Achilles or the Trojan crew,  
Showed little art, for praise was but their due.  
To say she 's fair that 's fair, this is no pains :  
He shows himself most poet, that most feigns :  
To find out virtues strangely hid in me ;  
Ay, there 's the art and learned poetry !  
To make one striding of a barbed steed,  
Prancing a stately round : I use indeed  
To ride Bat Jewel's jade ; this is the skill,  
This shows the poet wants not wit at will.  
I must admire aloof, and for my part  
Be well contented, since you do 't with art.

*Love's Burning-glass.*

WONDERING long, how I could harmless see  
Men gazing on those beams that fired me ;  
At last I found it was the crystal-love  
Before my heart, that did the heat improve :  
Which, by contracting of those scatter'd rays  
Into itself, did so produce my blaze.  
Now lighted by my love, I see the same  
Beams dazzle those, that me are wont t' inflame.  
And now I bless my love, when I do think  
By how much I had rather burn than wink.  
But how much happier were it thus to burn,  
If I had liberty to choose my urn !  
But since those beams do promise only fire,  
This flame shall purge me of the dross—desire.

---

*The Miracle.*

IF thou be'st ice, I do admire  
How thou couldst set my heart on fire ;  
Or how thy fire could kindle me,  
Thou being ice, and not melt thee ;  
But even my flames, light as thy own,  
Have hardened thee into a stone !

Wonder of love, that canst fulfil,  
 Inverting nature thus, thy will ;  
 Making ice one another burn,  
 Whilst itself doth harder turn.

Εἰ μὲν ἦν μαθεῖν  
 Α δεῖται παθεῖν  
 Καὶ μὴ παθεῖν  
 Καλὸν ἦν τὸ μαθεῖν  
 Εἰ δὲ δεῖται παθεῖν  
 'Α δεῖται μαθεῖν  
 Τι δεῖται μαθεῖν  
 Χρῆ γάρ παθεῖν.

Scire si liceret quæ debes subire,  
 Et non subire, pulchrum est scire :  
 Sed si subire debes quæ debes scire :  
 Quersum vis scire, nam debes subire ?

## ENGLISHED THUS—

**I**F man might know  
 The ill he must undergo,  
 And shun it so,  
 Then it were good to know :  
 But if he undergo it,  
 Though he know it,  
 What boots him know it ?  
 He must undergo it.

*Song.*

WHEN, dearest, I but think of thee,  
Methinks all things that lovely be  
Are present, and my soul delighted :  
For beauties that from worth arise  
Are like the grace of deities,  
Still present with us, though unsighted.

Thus whilst I sit, and sigh the day  
With all his borrowed lights away,  
Till night's black wings do overtake me,  
Thinking on thee, thy beauties then,  
As sudden lights do sleeping men,  
So they by their bright rays awake me.

Thus absence dies, and dying proves  
No absence can subsist with loves  
That do partake of fair perfection ;  
Since in the darkest night they may  
By love's quick motion find a way  
To see each other by reflection.

The waving sea can with each flood  
Bathe some high promont that hath stood  
Far from the main up in the river :  
O, think not then but love can do  
As much, for that's an ocean too,  
Which flows not every day, but ever !

## *The Expostulation.*

TELL me, ye juster deities,  
 That pity lovers' miseries,  
 Why should my own unworthiness  
 Fright me to seek my happiness?  
 It is as natural as just  
 Him for to love, whom needs I must:  
 All men confess that love's a fire,  
 Then who denies it to aspire?

Tell me, if thou wert fortune's thrall,  
 Wouldst thou not raise thee from the fall?  
 Seek only to o'erlook thy state,  
 Whereto thou art condemn'd by fate?  
 Then let me love my Coridon,  
 And by love's leave, him love alone:  
 For I have read of stories oft,  
 That love hath wings, and soars aloft.

Then let me grow in my desire,  
 Though I be martyr'd in that fire:  
 For grace it is enough for me,  
 But only to love such as he:  
 For never shall my thoughts be base,  
 Though luckless, yet without disgrace:  
 Then let him that my love shall blame,  
 Or clip love's wings, or quench love's flame.

*Detraction Execrated.*

THOU vermin slander, bred in abject minds  
Of thoughts impure, by vile tongues animate,  
Canker of conversation ! couldst thou find  
Nought but our love whereon to show thy hate ?  
Thou never wert when we two were alone ;  
What canst thou witness then ? thy base, dull aid  
Was useless in our conversation,  
Where each meant more than could by both be said.  
Whence hadst thou thy intelligence ; from earth ?  
That part of us ne'er knew that we did love :  
Or from the air ? Our gentle sighs had birth  
From such sweet raptures as to joy did move :  
Our thoughts, as pure as the chaste morning's breath,  
When from the night's cold arms it creeps away,  
Were cloth'd in words ; and maiden's blush that hath  
More purity, more innocence than they.  
Nor from the water couldst thou have this tale,  
No briny tear hath furrow'd her smooth cheek,  
And I was pleased ; I pray what should he ail  
That had her love, for what else could he seek ?  
We shortened days to moments by love's art,  
Whilst our two souls in amorous ecstasy  
Perceived no passing time, as if a part  
Our love had been of still eternity.  
Much less could have it from the purer fire :  
Our heat exhales no vapour from coarse sense,  
Such as are hopes, or fears, or fond desires ;  
Our mutual love itself did recompense.

Thou hast no correspondence in heaven,  
And th' elemental world thou seest is free :  
Whence hadst thou then this talking, monster? even  
From hell, a harbour fit for it and thee.  
Curst be th' officious tongue that did address  
Thee to her ears, to ruin my content :  
May it one minute taste such happiness,  
Deserving lose 't, unpitied it lament!  
I must forbear her sight, and so repay  
In grief those hours joy shortened to a dram :  
Each minute I will lengthen to a day,  
And in one year outlive Methusalem.

## *Song.*

UNJUST decrees, that do at once exact  
 From such a love as worthy hearts should own,  
     So wild a passion,  
 And yet so tame a presence  
     As holding no proportion,  
 Changes into impossible obedience.

Let it suffice, that neither I do love  
 In such a calm observance as to weigh  
     Each word I say,  
 And each examined look t' approve  
     That towards her doth move,  
     Without so much of fire  
 As might in time kindle into desire.

Or give me leave to burst into a flame,  
 And at the scope of my unbounded will  
     Love her my fill,  
 No superscriptions of fame,  
     Of honour, or good name,  
     No thought but to improve  
 The gentle and quick approaches of my love.

But thus to throng, and overlade a soul  
 With love, and then to leave a room for fear,  
     That shall all that control,  
     What is it but to rear  
 Our passions and our hopes on high,  
     That thence they may descry  
 The noblest way how to despair and die?

*A Prologue of the Author's to a  
Masque at Witten.*

EXPECT not here a curious river fine,  
Our wits are short of that : alas the time !  
The neat refined language of the court  
We know not ; if we did, our country sport  
Must not be too ambitious ; 'tis for kings,  
Not for their subjects, to have such rare things.  
Besides though, I confess, Parnassus hardly,  
Yet Helicon this summer-time is dry :  
Our wits were at an ebb or very low,  
And, to say troth, I think they cannot flow.  
But yet a gracious influence from you  
May alter nature in our brow-sick crew.  
Have patience then, we pray, and sit a while  
And, if a laugh be too much, lend a smile.

*Cantilena politica - jocunda facta  
post Principis discessum in Hispaniam, 1623.<sup>1</sup>*

I COME from England into France  
 Neither to learn to ring nor dance,  
     Nor yet to ride nor fence ;  
 Nor yet to see strange things as those,  
 Which have returned without the nose,  
     They carried out from hence.  
 But I to Paris rode along  
 Just<sup>2</sup> like John Dory in the song,  
     Upon an holy tide ;  
 For I an ambling nag did get,  
 I hope he is not paid for yet,  
     I spurred him on each side.  
 And to St Denis first I came  
 To see the sights at Notre Dame,  
     The man that sheweth snuffles ;  
 Where who is apt for to believe,  
 May see St Mary's right-hand sleeve,  
     And her old pantuffles :  
 Her breast, her milk, her very gown,  
 Which she did wear in Bethlehem town,  
     When in the inn she lay.

<sup>1</sup> [Not in the editions. Now printed from Harl. MS., 367, where it is anonymous, but in the handwriting of the late Sir Henry Ellis is attributed to Suckling. There is little doubt that it is his. If so, it was a very early production, even if (which is probable) it was not written quite so early as 1623. On the back is the endorsement: *Cantilena de Gallico itinere, 1623.*] <sup>2</sup> [MS., nist.]

That all the world knows is a fable,  
 For so good clothes ne'er lay in stable  
     Upon a lock of hay.  
 Nor carpenter could by his trade  
 Gain so much coin as to have made  
     A gown<sup>1</sup> of such rich stuff :  
 Yet they (poor souls) think for her credit,  
 They must believe old Joseph did it,  
     'Cause he deserved enough.  
 There is one of the Cross's nails,  
 Which whoso sees his bonnet vails,  
     And (if he will) may kneel.  
 Some say 'twas false, 'twas never so ;  
 But, feeling it, thus much I know,  
     It is as true as steel !  
 There is the lanthorn, which the Jews,  
 When Judas led them forth, did use ;  
     • It weighs my weight down-right :  
 Yet, to believe it, you must think  
 The Jews did put a candle in't ;  
     And then 'twas wondrous light.  
 There 's one saint there did lose his nose,  
 Another's head, another's toes,  
     An elbow and a thumb.  
 But when we had seen these holy rags,  
 We went to our inn, and took our nags,  
     And so away did come.  
 I came to Paris on the Seine ;  
 'Twas wonderous fair, but little clean ;  
     'Tis Europe's greatest town.  
 How strange it is, I need not tell it,  
 For all the world may easily smell it,  
     As they pass up and down.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Orig. *gayne*—which, after all, may be right, allowing for local pronunciation.]

There's many strange things for to see :  
 The Palace, the great Gallery ;  
     Place Royal doth excel ;  
 The new bridge and the statue there,  
 At Notre Dame, St Christopher,  
     The steeple bears the bell.  
 For learning the University,  
 And for old clothes the Frippery -  
     That house the queen did build.  
 St Innocent, whose teeth devours  
 Dead corpse in four-and-twenty hours,  
     And there the king was kill'd.  
 The Eastern and St Denis Street ;  
 The Spital, like to London Fleet ;  
     The Arsenal, no toy.  
 But if you'll see the prettiest thing,  
 You must go to court, and see the king :<sup>1</sup>  
     O, 'tis a hopeful boy !  
 For he by all his dukes and peers  
 Is reverenced for wit as much as years,  
     Nor may you think it much ;  
 For he with little switch can play,  
 And can make fine dirt-pies of clay :  
     O, never king made such !  
 A bird, that can but kill a fly,  
 Or prates, doth please his majesty,  
     'Tis known to every one.  
 The Duke of Guise gave him a parrot,  
 And he had twenty cannons for it,  
     And a great galleon.  
 O, that I e'er might have the hap  
 To get the bird within the map  
     'Tis called the Indian Roc !

---

<sup>1</sup> Lewis XIII., son to Henry IV., styled Great Henry.—*Note in MS.*

I'd give it him, and look to be  
 As great and wise as Luisuè,<sup>1</sup>  
     Or else I had hard luck.  
 Birds [a]round his chamber stands,  
 And he them feeds with his own hands—  
     'Tis his humility :  
 And if that they want anything,  
 They may go whistle for their king,  
     And he'll come presently.  
 Besides all this, he hath a jerk,  
 Taught him by nature for to work  
     In iron with great ease.  
 Sometimes into his forge he goes,  
 And there he puffs and there he blows,  
     And makes both locks and keys ;  
 Which puts a doubt in every one,  
 Whether he were Mars' or Vulcan's son—  
     Some few believes his mother ;  
 But yet let all say what they will,  
 I am resolved, and will think still,  
     As much the one as the other.  
 The people do mislike the youth,  
 Alleging reasons for a truth,  
     Mothers should honoured be ;  
 Yet some believe he loves her rather,  
 As well as she did love his father,  
     And that notoriously.  
 'Tis charity for to be known,  
 Loves others' children as his own ;  
     Nor must you think it shame ;  
 Unless that he would greater be  
 Than was his father Henry,  
     Whose thoughts ne'er did the same.

<sup>1</sup> Marques de Luines was his favourite, who died miserably during the last year's siege of Mountabō, 1622.—*Note in MS.*

## Verses.<sup>1</sup>

I AM confirm'd a woman can  
 Love this, or that, or any other man ;  
 This day she 's melting hot,  
 To-morrow swears she knows you not ;  
 If she but a new object find,  
 Then straight she 's of another mind.  
 Then hang me, ladies, at your door,  
 If e'er I doat upon you more.

Yet still I love the fairsome (why ?  
 For nothing but to please my eye) ;  
 And so the fat and soft-skinn'd dame  
 I 'll flatter to appease my flame ;  
 For she that's musical I 'll long,  
 When I am sad, to sing a song.

Then hang me, ladies, at your door,  
 If e'er I doat upon you more.

I 'll give my fancy leave to range  
 Through everywhere to find out change ;  
 The black, the brown, the fair shall be  
 But objects of variety ;  
 I 'll court you all to serve my turn,  
 But with such flames as shall not burn.

Then hang me, ladies, at your door,  
 If e'er I doat upon you more.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Communicated to *Notes and Queries*, 1st series, i. 72, by A[lexander] D[ycy?] The writer states that he found them in a small 4to volume of English poetry, temp. Charles I. They are there called "Sir John Suckling's Verses."]

## *Sir John Suckling's Answer.<sup>1</sup>*

I TELL thee, fellow, whoe'er thou be,  
 That made this fine sing-song of me,  
 Thou art a rhyming sot ;  
 These very lines do thee bewray,  
 This barren wit makes all men say,  
 'Twas some rebellious Scot.

But it's no wonder that you sing  
 Such songs of me, who am no king,  
 When every Blue Cap swears  
 He'll not obey King James his ba'r'n,  
 That hugs a bishop under his arm,  
 And hangs them in his ears.

Had I been of your covenant,  
 You would have call'd me John of Gaunt,  
 And given me great renown.  
 But now I am John for the King,  
 You say I am but a poor Suckling,  
 And thus you cry me down.

Well, it's no matter what you say  
 Of me or mine, that ran away ;  
 I hold it no good fashion  
 A loyal subject's blood to spill,  
 When we have knaves enough to kill  
 By force and proclamation.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Ashm. MS., 36, fol. 54. Now first printed? See what has been said in the Introduction.]

Commend me unto Lashly<sup>1</sup> stout,  
 And all his pedlars him about :  
     Tell them without remorse  
 That I will plunder all their packs  
 Which they have gotten, with stolen knick-knacks,  
     With these my hundred horse.

This holy war, this zealous firk,  
 Against the bishops and the kirk,  
     And its pretended bravery—  
 Religion, all the world can tell,  
 Amongst Highlanders ne'er did dwell—  
     It's but to cloak your knavery.

+ Such desperate gamesters as you be,  
 I cannot blame for tutoring me,  
     Since all you have is down ;  
 And every boor forgets the plough,  
 And swears that he'll turn gamester now  
     And venture for a crown.

<sup>1</sup> [Leslie, the hero of Newburn. The spelling *Lashly* is preserved, as it may have been intentionally so written.]

*P L A Y S.*

—o—

AGLAURA.

THE GOBLINS.

BRENNORALT.

THE SAD ONE.



A G L A U R A.

*Aglaura. Presented at the Private House in Black Fryers by His Majestie's servants. Written by Sir John Suckling.*

This and the other dramas are printed in all the old copies with an utter disregard to punctuation, arrangement of lines, and other such details. The edition of 1658 corrects occasionally those of 1646-48, and *vice versâ*.

The neglect of metrical rules is so complete throughout, that a good deal of the dialogue in these productions is incapable of arrangement as verse.

Probably few books of the seventeenth century were more carelessly printed than Suckling's works. English typography was then in its lowest state of degradation.



## *PROLOGUE.*

—o—

I 'VE thought upon 't ; and cannot tell which way  
Ought I can say now should advance the play;  
For plays are either good or bad : the good,  
If they do beg, beg to be understood ;  
And, in good faith, that has as bold a sound,  
As if a beggar should ask twenty pound.  
Men have it not about them :  
Then, gentlemen, if rightly understood,  
The bad do need less prologue than the good ;  
For, if it chance the plot be lame or blind,  
Ill-clothed, deformed throughout, it needs must find  
Compassion. It is a beggar without art,  
But it falls out in pennyworths of wit,  
As in all bargains else—men ever get  
All they can in ; will have London measure,  
A handful over in their very pleasure.  
And now ye have 't, he could not well deny 'e,  
And I dare swear he's scarce a saver by ye.

## *PROLOGUE TO THE COURT.*

—o—

THOSE common passions, hopes and fears, that still,  
The poets first, and then the prologues fill,  
In this our age : he that writ this, by me  
Protests against as modest foolery.  
He thinks it an odd thing to be in pain  
For nothing else, but to be well again.  
Who writes to fear is so : had he not writ,  
You ne'er had been the judges of his wit ;  
And when he had, did he but then intend  
To please himself, he sure might have his end  
Without the expense of hope ; and that he had,  
That made this play, although the play be bad.  
Then, gentlemen, be thrifty, save your dooms  
For the next man or the next play that comes ;  
For smiles are nothing where men do not care,  
And frowns as little where they need not fear.

*TO THE KING.*

—o—

THIS, Sir, to them, but unto Majesty  
All he has said before he does deny.  
Yet not to Majesty—that were to bring  
His fears to be but for the Queen and King,  
Not for yourselves ; and that he dares not say—  
You are his sovereigns another way.  
Your souls are princes, and you have as good  
A title that way, as ye have by blood,  
To govern ; and here your power 's more great  
And absolute than in the royal seat.  
There men dispute, and but by law obey,  
Here is no law at all, but what ye say.

*SCŒNA, PERSIA.*

—o—

KING, in love with Aglaura.

THERSAMES, Prince, in love with Aglaura.

ORBELLA, Queen, at first mistress to Ziriff; in love with Ariaspes.

ARIASPES, brother to the King.

ZIRIFF, otherwise Zorannes disguised, Captain of the Guard, in  
love with Orbella; brother to Aglaura.

IOLAS, a Lord of the Council, seeming friend to the Prince, but a  
traitor, in love with Semanthe.

AGLAURA, in love with the Prince, but named mistress to the  
King.

ORSAMES, a young lord anti-Platonic; friend to the Prince.

PHILAN, the same.

SEMANTHE, in love with Ziriff—Platonic.

ORITHIE, in love with Thersames.

PASITHAS, a faithful servant.

IOLINA, Aglaura's waiting-woman.

Courtiers. Huntsmen. Priest. Guard.



## *Aglaaura.*

—o—

### ACTUS I. SCŒNA I.

*Enter IOLAS, IOLINA.*

*Iol.* MARRIED ! and in Diana's grove !  
*Iolin.* So was th' appointment, or my  
sense deceived me.

*Iol.* Married !

Now by those powers that tie those pretty knots,  
'Tis very fine : good faith, 'tis wondrous fine.

*Iolin.* What is, brother ?

*Iol.* Why, to marry, sister ;  
T' enjoy 'twixt lawful and unlawful thus  
A happiness, steal as it were his own ;  
Diana's grove, sayest thou ? [Scratcheth his head.]

*Iolin.* That is the place ; the hunt once up, and all  
Engaged in the sport, they mean to leave  
The company, and steal unto those thickets,  
Where there's a priest attends them.

*Iol.* And will they lie together, think'st thou ?

*Iolin.* Is there distinction of sex, think you,  
Or flesh and blood ?

*Iol.* True ; but the king, sister !

*Iolin.* But love, brother !

*Iol.* Thou sayest well ; 'tis fine, 'tis wondrous fine !  
Diana's grove ?

*Iolin.* Yes, Diana's grove ;  
But, brother, if you should speak of this now.

*Iol.* Why, thou knowest a drowning man holds  
not a thing so fast :  
*Semanthe!* she shuns me too !

[Enter *Semanthe*; she sees *Iolas*,  
and goes in again.]

*Iolin.* The wound festered sure :  
The hurt the boy gave her, when first  
She looked abroad into the world, is not yet cured.

*Iol.* What hurt ?

*Iolin.* Why, know you not  
She was in love long since with young Zorannes  
(Aglaura's brother), and the now queen's betrothed ?

*Iol.* Some such slight tale I've heard.

*Iolin.* Slight ? she yet does weep, when she but  
hears him named,  
And tells the prettiest and the saddest stories  
Of all those civil wars, and those amours,  
That, trust me, both my lady and myself  
Turn weeping statues still.

*Iol.* Pish ! 'tis not that.  
'Tis Ziriff and his fresh glories here  
Have robbed me of her.  
Since he thus appeared in court,  
My love has languished worse than plants in drought.  
But time's a good physician. Come, let's in.  
The king and queen by this time are come forth.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter Serving-men to ZIRIFF.*

1 *Serv.* Yonder's a crowd without, as if some  
strange sight were to be seen to-day here.

2 *Serv.* Two or three with carbonadoes afore instead of faces mistook the door for a breach, and, at

the opening of it, are striving still which should enter first.

3 Serv. Is my lord busy?

[Knocks.]

*Enter ZIRIFF, as in his study.*

1 Serv. My lord, there are some soldiers without.

Zir. Well, I will despatch them presently.

2 Serv. The ambassadors from the Cadusians too.

Zir. Show them the gallery.

3 Serv. One from the king.

Zir. Again? I come, I come.

[*Exeunt Serving-men.*]

*ZIRIFF solus.*

Greatness, thou vainer shadow of the prince's beams,  
Begot by mere reflection, nourished in extremes;  
First taught to creep, and live upon the glance,  
Poorly to fare, till thine own proper strength  
Bring thee to surfeit of thyself at last:  
How dull a pageant would this states-play seem  
To me now, were not my love and my revenge  
Mix'd with it?

Three tedious winters have I waited here,  
Like patient chemists blowing still the coals,  
And still expecting, when the blessed hour  
Would come, should make me master of  
The Court Elixir Power; for that turns all.  
'Tis in projection now; down, sorrow, down,  
And swell my heart no more, and thou, wrong'd ghost  
Of my dead father, to thy bed again,  
And sleep securely!  
It cannot be long, for sure fate must,  
As it has been cruel, so [in] a while be just. [Exit.]

*Enter KING and Lords, the Lords entreating for  
prisoners.*

King. I say they shall not live; our mercy

Would turn [to] sin, should we but use it e'er :  
 Pity and love the bosses only be  
 Of government merely for show and ornament.  
 Fear is the bit that man's proud will restrains,  
 And makes its vice its virtue. See it done.

*Enter to them QUEEN, AGLAURA, Ladies. The KING addresses himself to AGLAURA.*

So early and so curious in your dress, fair mistress !  
 These pretty ambushes and traps for hearts,  
 Set with such care to-day, look like design :  
 Speak, lady, is 't a massacre resolved ?  
 Is conquering one by one grown tedious sport ?  
 Or is the number of the taken such,  
 That for your safety you must kill outright ?

*Agl.* Did none do greater mischief, sir, than I,  
 Heaven would not much be troubled with sad story,  
 Nor would the quarrel man has to the stars  
 Be kept alive so strongly.

*King.* When he does leave it,  
 Woman must take it up, and justly too ;  
 For robbing of the sex, and giving all to you.

*Agl.* Their weaknesses you mean, and I confess, sir.

*King.* The greatest subjects of their power or glory.  
 Such gentle rape thou act'st upon my soul,  
 And with such pleasing violence dost force it still,  
 That, when it should resist, it tamely yields,  
 Making a kind of haste to be undone,  
 As if the way to victory were loss,  
 And conquest came by overthrow.

*Enter an Express, delivering a packet upon his knee.*  
*The KING reads.*

*Queen.* Pretty ! [The Queen, looking upon a flower  
 in one of the Ladies' heads.  
 Is it the child of nature, or of some fair hand ?

*La.* 'Tis as the beauty, madam, of some faces,  
Art's issue only.

*King.* Thersames,  
This concerns you most ; brought you her picture ?

*Exp.* Something made up for her in haste I have.  
[*Presents the picture.*

*King.* If she does owe no part of this fair dower  
Unto the painter, she is rich enough.

*Agl.* A kind of merry sadness in this face  
Becomes it much.

*King.* There is indeed, Aglaura,  
A pretty sullenness dress'd up in smiles,  
That says this beauty can both kill and save.  
How like you her, Thersames ?

*Ther.* As well as any man can do a house  
By seeing of the portal ; here 's but a face ;  
And faces, sir, are things I have not studied ;  
I have my duty, and may boldly swear,  
What you like best will ever please me most.

*King.* Spoke like Thersames and my son !  
Come : the day holds fair.  
Let all the huntsmen meet us in the vale ;  
We will uncouple there. [*Exeunt.*

### ARIASPES *solus.*

*Ari.* How odd a thing a crowd is unto me !  
Sure nature intended I should be alone.  
Had not that old doting man-midwife Time  
Slept when he should have brought me forth, I had  
Been so to. [*Studies and scratches his head.*  
To be born near, and only near a crown !

### Enter IOLAS.

*Iol.* How now, my lord ?  
What, walking o' th' tops of pyramids ?  
Whispering yourself away  
Like a denied lover ? come, to horse, to horse !

And I will show you straight a sight shall please you,  
More than kind looks from her you dote upon  
After a falling out.

*Ari.* Prythee, what is 't?

*Iol.* I'll tell you, as I go.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter* Huntsmen *hallooing and whooping.*

*Hunts.* Which way, which way?

*Enter* THERSAMES, *with AGLAURA muffled.*

*Ther.* This is the grove, 'tis somewhere here within.

[*Exeunt.*]

*Enter, dogging of them,* ARIASPES, IOLAS.

*Iol.* Gently, gently!

*Enter* ORSAMES, PHILAN, *a Huntsman, two Courtiers.*

*Hunts.* No hurt, my lord, I hope?

*Ors.* None, none;

Thou wouldst have warranted it to another,  
If I had broke my neck.

What? dost think my horse and I show tricks?

That which way soever he throws me,  
Like a tumbler's boy I must fall safe?

Was there a bed of roses there? would I were eunuch,  
if I had not as lief have fallen in the state as where  
I did! the ground was as hard as if it had been paved  
with Platonic ladies' hearts, and this unconscionable  
fellow asks whether I have no hurt! Where's my  
horse?

*1 Court.* Making love to the next mare, I think.

*2 Court.* Not the next, I assure you;

He's gallop'd away, as if all the spurs i' th' field  
Were in his sides.

*Ors.* Why, there it is: the jade's in the fashion too.  
Now he's done me an injury, he will not come  
near me!

Well, when I hunt next, may it be upon a starv'd  
cow,

Without a saddle too. And may I fall into a sawpit,  
And not be taken up, but with suspicion  
Of having been private with mine own beast there.  
Now I better consider on 't too, gentlemen,  
'Tis but the same thing we do at court;  
Here's every man striving who shall be foremost,  
and

Hotly pursuing of what he seldom overtakes,  
Or if he does, it's no great matter.

*Phi.* He that's best hors'd, that is, best friended,  
Gets in soonest, and then all he has to do  
Is to laugh at those that are behind. Shall we  
Help you, my lord?

*Ors.* Prythee, do. Stay!  
To be in view's to be in favour, is it not?

*Phi.* Right.

And he that has a strong faction against him, hunts  
upon a cold scent, and may in time come to a loss.

*Ors.* Here's one rides two miles about, while another  
leaps a ditch, and is in before him.

*Phi.* Where note, the indirect way's the nearest!

*Ors.* Good again!

*Phi.* And here's another puts on, and falls into a  
quagmire, that is, follows the court, till he has spent  
all; for your court quagmire is want of money—there  
a man is sure to stick, and then not one helps him  
out, if they do not laugh at him.

1 *Court.* What think you of him that hunts after  
my rate,  
And never sees the deer?

2 *Court.* Why, he is like some young fellow that  
follows

The court and never sees the king.

*Ors.* To spur a horse, till he is tired, is—

*Phi.* To importune a friend till he weary of you.

*Ors.* For then, upon the first occasion, you're  
thrown off,  
As I was now.

*Phi.* This is nothing to the catching of your horse,  
Orsames.

*Ors.* Thou sayest true : I think he is no transmi-  
grated  
Philosopher, and therefore not likely to be taken with  
morals.

Gentlemen, your help ; the next, I hope, will be yours,  
And then 'twill be my turn. [Exeunt.]

*Enter again, married, THERSAMES and AGLAURA, with  
Priest.*

*Ther.* Fear not, my dear ; if, when love's diet  
Was bare looks, and those stol'n too,  
He yet did thrive, what then  
Will he do now ? when every night will be  
A feast, and every day fresh revelry !

*Agl.* Will he not surfeit when he once shall come  
To grosser fare, my lord, and so grow sick ?  
And love once sick, how quickly it will die !

*Ther.* Ours cannot ; 'tis as immortal as the things  
That elemented it, which were our souls :  
Nor can they e'er impair in health, for what  
These holy rites do warrant us to do,  
More than our bodies would for quenching thirst.  
Come, let's to horse ; we shall be miss'd ;  
For we are envy's mark, and court eyes carry far.  
Your prayers and silence, sir. [To the Priest.]

[Exeunt.]

*Enter ARIASPES, IOLAS.*

*Ari.* If it succeed, I wear thee here, my Iolas.

*Iol.* If it succeed ? will night succeed the day,  
Or hours one to another ? is not his lust  
The idol of his soul, and was not she  
The idol of his lust ? As safely he might

Have stol'n the diadem from off his head,  
And he would less have miss'd it.  
You now, my lord, must raise his jealousy :  
Teach it to look through the false optic, fear,  
And make it see all double. Tell him, the prince  
Would not have thus presumed, but that he does  
Intend worse yet ; and that his crown and life  
Will be the next attempt.

*Ari.* Right, and I will urge,  
How dangerous it is unto the present state  
To have the creatures and the followers  
Of the next prince, whom all now strive to please,  
Too near about him.

*Iol.* What, if the malcontents, that use  
To come unto him, were discovered ?

*Ari.* By no means ; for it were in vain to give  
Him discontent (which, too, must needs be done),  
If they within him gave it not nourishment.

*Iol.* Well, I 'll away first, for the print 's too big,  
If we be seen together. [Exit.

*Ari.* I have so fraught this bark with hope, that it  
Dares venture now in any storm or weather ;  
And if he sinks or splits, all 's one to me.  
“ Ambition seems all things, and yet is none,  
But in disguise stalks to opinion,  
And fools it into faith for everything.”  
'Tis not with the ascending to a throne  
As 'tis with stairs and steps that are the same ;  
For to a crown each humour 's a degree ;  
And as men change and differ, so must we.  
The name of virtue doth the people please,  
Not for their love to virtue, but their ease.  
And parrot-rumour I that tale have taught,  
By making love I hold the woman's grace ;  
'Tis the court's double key, and entrance gets  
To all the little plots. The fiery spirits  
My love to arms hath drawn into my faction ;

All but the minion of the time is mine,  
 And he shall be, or shall not be at all.  
 He that beholds a wing in pieces torn,  
 And knows not that to heav'n it once did bear  
 The high-flown and self-lessening bird, will think  
 And call them idle subjects of the wind :  
 When he that has the skill to imp and bind  
 These in right places, will thus truth discover,  
 That borrowed instruments do oft convey  
 The soul to her propos'd intents, and where  
 Our stars deny, art may supply. [Exit.]

*Enter SEMANTHE, ORITHIE, ORSAMES, PHILAN.*

*Sem.* Think you it is not then  
 The little jealousies, my lord, and fears :  
 Joy mix'd with doubt, and doubt reviv'd with hope,  
 That crowns all love with pleasure ? these are lost,  
 When once we come to full fruition :  
 Like waking in the morning, when all night  
 Our fancy has been fed with some new strange delight.

*Ors.* I grant you, madam, that the fears and joys,  
 Hopes and desires, mix'd with despairs and doubts,  
 Do make the sport in love ; [and] that they are  
 The very dogs by which we hunt the hare ;  
 But as the dogs would stop, and straight give o'er,  
 Were it not for the little thing before ;  
 So would our passions ; both alike must be  
 Flesh'd in the chase.

*Ori.* Will you, then, place the happiness but there,  
 Where the dull ploughman and the ploughman's horse  
 Can find it out ? Shall souls refin'd not know  
 How to preserve alive a noble flame,  
 But let it die—burn out to appetite ?

*Sem.* Love's a chameleon, and would live on air,  
 Physic for agues ; starving is his food.

*Ors.* Why, there it is now ! a greater epicure  
 Lives not on earth. My lord and I have been  
 In 's privy kitchen, seen his bills of fare.

*Sem.* And how, and how, my lord ?

*Ors.* A mighty prince, and full of curiosity !  
Hearts newly slain serv'd up entire,  
And stuck with little arrows instead of cloves.

*Phi.* Sometimes a cheek plump'd up  
With broth, with cream and claret mingled  
For sauce, and round about the dish  
Pomegranate kernels, strew'd on leaves of lilies !

*Ors.* Then will he have black eyes, for those of late  
He feeds on much, and for variety the grey.

*Phi.* You forget his cover'd dishes  
Of jenestrays, and marmalade of lips,  
Perfum'd by breath sweet as the bean's first blossoms.

*Sem.* Rare !  
And what's the drink to all this meat, my lord ?

*Ors.* Nothing but pearl dissolv'd, tears still fresh  
fetch'd  
From lovers' eyes, which, if they come to be  
Warm in the carriage, are straight cool'd with sighs.

*Sem.* And all this rich proportion perchance  
We would allow him :

*Ors.* True ! but therefore this is but his common  
diet :  
Only serves when his chief cooks,  
Liking and Opportunity, are out of the way.  
For when he feasts indeed,  
'Tis there where the wise people of the world  
Did place the virtues—i' th' middle, madam.

*Ori.* My lord, there is so little hope we should  
convert you ;  
And if we should, so little got by it,  
That we 'll not lose so much upon 't as sleep.  
Your lordship's servants. [Prepare to go.]

*Ors.* Nay, ladies, we will wait upon you to your  
chambers.

*Phi.* Prythee, let's spare the compliment, we shall  
Do no good.

*Ors.* By this hand, I'll try ;  
They keep me fasting, and I must be praying.

[*Exeunt.*

AGLAURA *undressing herself.* IOLINA.

*Agl.* Undress me ; is it not late, Iolina ?  
It was the longest day this—

*Enter* THERSAMES.

*Ther.* Softly, as death itself comes on,  
When it does steal away the sick man's breath,  
And standers-by perceive it not,  
Have I trod the way unto these lodgings.  
How wisely do those powers  
That give us happiness, order it !  
Sending us still fears to bound our joys,  
Which else would overflow and lose themselves :  
See where she sits,  
Like day retir'd into another world.  
Dear mine ! where all the beauty man admires  
In scattered pieces does united lie.  
Where sense does feast, and yet where sweet desire  
Lives in its longing, like a miser's eye,  
That never knew nor saw satiety :  
Tell me, by what approaches must I come  
To take in what remains of my felicity ?

*Agl.* Needs there any new ones, where the breach  
Is made already ? you are enter'd here,  
Long since, sir, here, and I have giv'n up all.

*Ther.* All but the fort ; and in such wars as these,  
Till that be yielded up, there is no peace  
Nor triumph to be made. Come, undo, undo ;  
And from these envious clouds slide quick  
Into love's proper sphere, thy bed.  
The weary traveller, whom the busy sun  
Hath vex'd all day, and scorch'd almost to tinder,  
Ne'er long'd for night as I have long'd for this.

What rude hand is that ?

[One knocks hastily. Iolina goes to the door.  
Go, Iolina, see, but let none enter—

*Iolin.* 'Tis Ziriff, sir.

*Ther.* O, something of weight hath fallen out, it  
seems,  
Which in his zeal he could not keep till morning.  
But one short minute, dear, into that chamber.

[Exit Aglaura.

*Enter ZIRIFF.*

How now ? thou start'st as if thy sins had met thee,  
Or thy father's ghost ; what news, man ?

*Zir.* Such as will send the blood of hasty messages  
Unto the heart, and make it call  
All that is man about you into council :  
Where is the princess, sir ?

*Ther.* Why, what of her ?

*Zir.* The king must have her.

*Ther.* How ?

*Zir.* The king must have her, sir.

*Ther.* Though fear of worse makes ill still relish  
better ;

And this look handsome in our friendship, Ziriff,  
Yet so severe a preparation

There needed not. Come, come, what is 't ?

[Ziriff leads him to the door,  
and shows him a guard.

A guard !

Thersames, thou art lost ; betray'd  
By faithless and ungrateful man, out of a happiness.

[He steps between the door and him, and draws.

The very thought of that

Will lend my anger so much noble justice  
That, wert thou master of as much fresh life  
As thou 'st been of villainy, it should not serve  
Nor stock thee out to glory or repent  
The least of it.

*Zir.* Put up, put up ! such unbecoming anger  
I have not seen you wear before.

What, draw upon your friend ! [Discovering himself.  
Do you believe me right now ?

*Ther.* I scarce believe mine eyes ! Zorannes ?

*Zir.* The same, but how preserv'd, or why  
Thus long disguis'd, to you a freer hour must speak.  
That you're betray'd, is certain ; but by whom,  
Unless the priest himself, I cannot guess,  
More than the marriage though he knows not of.  
If you now send her on this early summons,  
Before the sparks are grown into a flame,  
You do redeem th' offence, or make it less ;  
And, on my life, his intents are fair,  
And he will but besiege, not force affection.  
So you gain time. If you refuse, there's but  
One way ; you know his power and passion.

*Ther.* Into how strange a labyrinth am I  
Now fall'n ! what shall I do, Zorannes ?

*Zir.* Do, sir, as seamen that have lost their light  
And way : strike sail, and lie quiet a while.  
Your forces in the province are not yet  
In readiness, nor is our friend Zephines  
Arriv'd at Delphos ; nothing is ripe. Besides——

*Ther.* Good heavens, did I but dream that she was  
mine ?

Upon imagination did I climb up to  
This height ? Let me then wake and die :  
Some courteous hand snatch me from what's to come,  
And, ere my wrongs have being, give them end.

*Zir.* How poor and how unlike the prince is this ?  
This trifling woman does unman us all :  
Robs us so much, it makes us things of pity.  
Is this a time to loose our anger in,  
And vainly breathe it out, when all we have  
Will hardly fill the sail of Resolution,  
And make us bear up high enough for action ?

*Ther.* I have done, sir ; pray chide no more ;  
 The slave, whom tedious custom has inur'd,  
 And taught to think of misery as of food,  
 Counting it but a necessary of life,  
 And so digesting it, shall not so much as once  
 Be nam'd to patience, when I am spoken of.  
 Mark me ; for I will now undo myself  
 As willingly as virgins all give up  
 First nights to them they love.      [Offers to go out.]

*Zir.* Stay, sir, 'twere fit Aglaura yet were kept  
 In ignorance. I will dismiss the guard,  
 And be myself again.      [Exit.]

*Ther.* In how much worse estate am I in now,  
 Than if I ne'er had known her ! Privation  
 Is a misery as much above bare wretchedness  
 As that is short of happiness :  
 So when the sun does not appear,  
 'Tis darker, 'cause it once was here.

*Enter ZIRIFF, speaks to ORSAMES and others half entered.*

*Zir.* Nay, gentlemen,  
 There needs no force where there is no resistance :  
 I'll satisfy the king myself.

*Ther.* O, it is well ye are come.  
 There was within me fresh rebellion,  
 And reason was almost unking'd again.  
 But you shall have her, sir.

[Goes out to fetch Aglaura.]

*Zir.* What doubtful combats in this noble youth  
 Passion and reason have !

*Enter THERSAMES, leading AGLAURA.*

*Ther.* Here, sir.      [Gives her and goes out.]

*Agl.* What means the prince, my lord ?

*Zir.* Madam, his wiser fear has taught him to dis-  
 guise

His love, and make it look a little rude at parting.  
 Affairs, that do concern all that you hope  
 From happiness, this night force him away ;  
 And lest you should have tempted him to stay,  
 Which he did doubt you would, and would prevail—  
 He left you thus ; he does desire by me  
 You would this night lodge in the little tower,  
 Which is in my command ; the reasons why  
 Himself will shortly tell you.

*Agl.* 'Tis strange, but I am all obedience. [ *Exeunt.*

## ACTUS II. SCENAE I.

*Enter* THERSAMES, *with* IOLAS, *a lord of the Council.*

*Iol.* I told him, sir ; urg'd 'twas no common knot,  
 That to the tying of it two powerful princes,  
 Virtue and Love, were join'd, and that a greater  
 Than these two was now engaged in 't, Religion.  
 But 'twould not do ; the cork of passion  
 Buoy'd up all reason so, that what was said  
 Swam but o' th' top of th' ear, ne'er reach'd the heart.

*Ther.* Is there no way for kings to show their  
 power  
 But in their subjects' wrongs ? no subject neither,  
 But his own son ?

*Iol.* Right, sir :  
 No quarry for his lust to gorge on, but on what  
 You fairly had flown at and taken ?  
 Well, were it not the king, or were 't indeed  
 Not you, that have such hopes, and such a crown  
 To venture, and yet it is but a woman.

*Ther.* How ? that *but* again ! and thou art more  
 injurious  
 Than he, and wouldst provoke me sooner !

*Iol.* Why, sir ?  
 There are no altars yet address'd unto her,

Nor sacrifice. If I have made her less  
 Than what she is, it was my love to you ;  
 For in my thoughts and here within I hold her  
 The noblest piece Nature e'er lent our eyes,  
 And of the which all women else are but  
 Weak counterfeits, made up by her journeymen :  
 But was this fit to tell you ?

I know you value but too high all that.  
 And in a loss we should not make things more ;  
 'Tis misery's happiness that we can make it less  
 By art, through a forgetfulness upon  
 Our ills. Yet who can do it here ?  
 When every voice must needs, and every face,  
 Showing what she was not, show what she was.

*Ther.* I'll instantly unto him. [Draws.

*Iol.* Stay, sir.  
 Though 't be the utmost of my fortune's hope  
 To have an equal share of ill with you :  
 Yet I could wish we sold this trifle life  
 At a far dearer rate than we are like to do,  
 Since 'tis a king's the merchant.

*Ther.* Ha !  
 King ? Ay, it is indeed ;  
 And there's no art can cancel that high bond.

*Iol.* He cools again. [To himself.  
 True, sir, and yet methinks to know a reason ;  
 For passive nature ne'er had glorious end ;  
 And he that states' preventions ever learn'd,  
 Knows 'tis one motion to strike and to defend.

*Enter* Serving-man.

*Serv.* Some of the lords without, and from the king,  
 They say, wait you.

*Ther.* What subtle state-trick now ?  
 But one turn here, and I am back, my lord. [Exit.

*Iol.* This will not do ; his resolution's like  
 A skilful horseman, and reason is the stirrup,

Which, though a sudden shock may make  
 It loose, yet does it meet it handsomely again.  
 Stay, it must be some sudden fear of wrong  
 To her, that may draw on a sudden act  
 From him, and ruin from the king ; for such  
 A spirit will not, like common ones, be  
 Raised by every spell ; 'tis in love's circle  
 Only it will appear.

*Enter THERSAMES.*

*Ther.* I cannot bear the burthen of my wrongs  
 One minute longer.

*Iol.* Why ! what's the matter, sir ?

*Ther.* They do pretend the safety of the state :  
 Now, nothing but my marriage with Cadusia  
 Can secure the adjoining country to it ;  
 Confinement during life for me if I refuse.  
 Diana's nunnery for her ; and at that nunn'ry, Iolas,  
 Allegiance in me, like the string of a watch  
 Wound up too high, and forc'd above the nick,  
 Ran back, and in a moment was unravell'd all.

*Iol.* Now, by the love I bear to justice,  
 That nunn'ry was too severe. When virtuous love's  
 a crime,

What man can hope to 'scape a punishment,  
 Or who's indeed so wretched to desire it ?

*Ther.* Right ! —

*Iol.* What answer made you, sir !

*Ther.* None : they gave me till to-morrow,  
 And e'er that be, or they or I  
 Must know our destiny.  
 Come, friend, let's in ; there is no sleeping now ;  
 For time is short, and we have much to do. [*Exeunt.*]

*Enter ORSAMES, PHILAN, Courtiers.*

*Ors.* Judge you, gentlemen, if I be not as unfortunate

As a gamester thinks himself upon the loss  
 Of the last stake ; this is the first she  
 I ever swore to heartily, and, by those eyes,  
 I think I had continued unperjur'd a whole month,  
 And that's fair, you'll say.

*1 Court.* Very fair.

*Ors.* Had she not run mad betwixt !

*2 Court.* How ? mad ?

Who ? Semanthe ?

*Ors.* Yea, yea, mad ; ask Philan else.  
 People that want clear intervals talk not  
 So wildly. I'll tell you, gallants ; 'tis now, since first I  
 Found myself a little hot and quivering 'bout the  
 heart,  
 Some ten days since ; a tedious ague, sirs :  
 But what of that ?

The gracious glance and little whisper pass'd,  
 Approaches made from th' hand unto the lip,  
 I came to visit her, and as, you know, we use  
 Breathing a sigh or two by the way of prologue,  
 Told her that in love's physic 'twas a rule,  
 Where the disease had birth, to seek a cure.  
 I had no sooner nam'd love to her, but she  
 Began to talk of flames, and flames  
 Neither devouring nor devour'd, of air  
 And of chameleons.

*1 Court.* O the Platonics !

*2 Court.* Those of the new religion in love ! your  
 lordship's merry,  
 Troth, how do you like the humour on 't ?

*Ors.* As thou wouldst like red hair or leanness  
 In thy mistress, scurvily ! 't does worse with handsome-  
 ness

Than strong desire could do with impotence :  
 A mere trick to enhance the price of kisses.

*Phi.* Surely these silly women, when they feed  
 Our expectation so high, do but like

Ignorant conjurors, that raise a spirit,  
Which handsomely they cannot lay again.

*Ors.* True, 'tis like some that nourish up  
Young lions, till they grow so great they are afraid of  
Themselves : they dare not grant at last,  
For fear they should not satisfy.

*Phi.* Who's for the town ? I must take up again.

*Ors.* This villainous love's as changeable as the  
philosopher's stone, and thy mistress as hard to  
compass too !

*Phi.* The Platonic is ever so ; they are as tedious,  
Before they come to the point, as an old man  
Fall'n into the stories of his youth.

*2 Court.* Or a widow into the praises of her first  
husband.

*Ors.* Well, if she hold out but one month longer,  
If I do not quite forget I e'er beleaguered there,  
And remove the siege to another place, may all  
The curses beguil'd virgins loose upon  
Their perjur'd lovers fall upon me.

*Phi.* And thou wouldest deserve 'em all.

*Ors.* For what ?

*Phi.* For being in the company of those,  
That took away the prince's mistress from him.

*Ors.* Peace, that will be redeem'd.  
I put but on this wildness to disguise myself ;  
There are brave things in hand, hark i' thy ear.

[Whispers.]

*1 Court.* Some severe plot upon a maidenhead.  
These two young lords make love,  
As embroiderers work against a masque, night and  
day ;

They think importunity a nearer way than merit,  
And take wonien as schoolboys catch squirrels ;  
Hunt 'em up and down, till they are weary,  
And fall down before 'em.

*Ors.* Who loves the prince fails not —

*Phi.* And I am one : my injuries are great as thine,  
And do persuade as strongly.

*Ors.* I had command to bring thee ;  
Fail not, and in thine one disguise.

*Phi.* Why in disguise ?

*Ors.* It is the prince's policy and love ;  
For, if we should miscarry,  
Some one taken might betray the rest,  
Unknown to one another ;  
Each man is safe in his own valour.

2 *Court.* And what mercer's wife are you to  
cheapen now  
Instead of his silks ?

*Ors.* Troth ; 'tis not so well ; 'tis but a cousin of  
thine :  
Come, Philan, let 's along. [Exeunt.]

*Enter QUEEN alone.*

*Orb.* What is it thus within whispering remorse,  
And calls love tyrant ? all powers but his  
Their rigour and our fear have made divine.  
But every creature holds of him by sense—  
The sweetest tenure. Ye're but my husband's brother :  
And what of that ? do harmless birds or beasts  
Ask leave of curious Heraldry at all ?  
Does not the womb of one fair spring  
Bring unto the earth many sweet rivers,  
That wantonly do one another chase,  
And in one bed kiss, mingle, and embrace ?  
Man (Nature's heir) is not by her will tied,  
To shun all creatures are alli'd unto him,  
For then she should shun all ; since death and life  
Doubly allies all them that live by breath :  
The air that doth impart to all life's brood  
Refreshment, is so near to itself, and to us all,  
That all in all is individual.  
But how am I sure one and the same desire

Warms Ariaspes ; for art can keep alive  
A bedrid love ?

*Enter ARIASPES.*

*Ari.* Alone, madam, and overcast with thought !  
Uncloud, uncloud ; for, if we may believe  
The smiles of fortune, love shall no longer pine  
In prison thus, nor undelivered travail  
With throes of fear and of desire about it.  
The prince, like to a valiant beast in nets,  
Striving to force a freedom suddenly,  
Has made himself at length the surer prey :  
The king stands only now betwixt, and is  
Just like a single tree, that hinders all the prospect :  
'Tis but the cutting down of him, and we—

*Orb.* Why, wouldest thou thus embark into strange  
seas,  
And trouble Fate for what we have already ?  
Thou art to me, what thou now seek'st, a kingdom ;  
And were thy love as great as thy ambition,  
I should be so to thee.

*Ari.* Think you you are not, madam ?  
As well and justly may you doubt the truths  
Tortur'd or dying men do leave behind them :  
But then my fortune turns my misery,  
When my addition shall but make you less ;  
Shall I endure that head, that wore a crown,  
For my sake should wear none ? First, let me lose  
Th' exchequer of my wealth—your love ; nay, may  
All that rich treasury you have about you,  
Be rifled by the man I hated, and I look on ;  
Though youth be full of sin, and heav'n be just,  
So sad a doom I hope they keep not for me ;  
Remember what a quick apostasy he made,  
When all his vows were up to heav'n and you.  
How, ere the bridal torches were burnt out,  
His flames grew weak and sicklier : think on that.

Think how unsafe you are, if she should now  
Not sell her honour at a lower rate  
Than your place in his bed.

*Orb.* And would not you prove false, too, then?

*Ari.* By this—and this—love's breakfast;

[*Kisses her.*

By his feasts, too, yet to come, by all the  
Beauty in this face, divinity too great  
To be profan'd!

*Orb.* O, do not swear by that;  
Cankers may eat that flower upon the stalk  
(For sickness and mischance are great devourers),  
And when there is not in these cheeks and lips  
Left red enough to blush at perjury,  
When you shall make it, what shall I do then?

*Ari.* Our souls by that time, madam,  
Will by long custom so acquainted be,  
They will not need that duller trouch-man Flesh,  
But freely, and without those poorer helps,  
Converse and mingle; meantime we will teach  
Our loves to speak, not thus to live by signs,  
And action is his native language, madam.

*Enter ZIRIFF unseen.*

This box but open'd to the sense will do it.

*Orb.* I undertake, I know not what.

*Ari.* Thine own safety, dearest.

Let it be this night, if thou dost

Love thyself or me. [Whisper and kiss.]

*Orb.* That's very sudden.

*Ari.* Not, if we be so, and we must now be wise,  
For when their sun sets, ours begins to rise. [*Exeunt.*]

*ZIRIFF solus.*

*Zir.* Then all my fears are true, and she is false;  
False as a falling star or glowworm's fire.  
This devil Beauty is compounded strangely:

It is a subtle point, and hard to know,  
 Whether 't has in 't more active tempting,  
 Or [is] more passive tempted; so soon it forces,  
 And so soon it yields.

Good Gods! she seiz'd my heart, as if from you  
 She'd had commission to have us'd me so;  
 And all mankind besides. And see, if the

Just ocean makes more haste to pay  
 To needy rivers, what it borrow'd first,  
 Than she to give, where she ne'er took.

Methinks I feel anger, revenge's harbinger,  
 Chalking up all within, and thrusting out  
 Of doors the tame and softer passions.

It must be so:

To love is noble frailty, but poor sin,  
 When we fall once to love, [to be] unloved again.

[Exit.]

*Enter KING, ARIASPES, IOLAS.*

*Ari.* 'Twere fit your justice did consider, sir,  
 What way it took. If you should apprehend  
 The prince for treason, which he never did,  
 And which (unacted) is unborn—at least 'twill be  
 believ'd so :

Lookers-on and the loud-talking crowd  
 Will think it all but water colours laid  
 On for a time; and which, wiped off, each common eye  
 Would see strange ends through stranger ways.

*King.* Think'st thou I will compound with treason  
 then?

And make one fear another's advocate?

*Iol.* Virtue forbid, sir, but if you'd permit  
 Them to approach the room (yet who'd advise  
 Treason should come so near?) there would be then  
 No place left for excuse.

*King.* How strong are they?

*Iol.* Weak, considering

The enterprise ; they are but few in number,  
 And those few too having nothing but  
 Their resolutions considerable about them :  
 A troop indeed design'd to suffer what  
 They come to execute.

*King.* Who are they are thus weary of their lives ?

*Iol.* Their names I cannot give you.  
 For those he sent for, he did still receive  
 At a back door, and so dismiss'd them too.  
 But I do think Ziriff is one.

*King.* Take heed ! I shall suspect thy hate to others,  
 Not thy love to me, begot this service ;  
 This treason, thou thyself dost say  
 Has but an hour's age, and I can give accompt  
 Of him beyond that time. Brother, in the little tower,  
 Where now Aglaura's prisoner,  
 You shall find him ; bring him along.  
 He yet doth stand untainted in my thoughts,  
 And to preserve him so,  
 He shall not stir out of my eyes' command,  
 Till this great cloud be over.

*Iol.* Sir, 'twas the prince, who first——

*King.* I know all that ! urge it no more !  
 I love the man ;  
 And 'tis with pain we do suspect,  
 Where we do not dislike.  
 Thou 'rt sure he will have some,  
 And that they will come to-night ?

*Iol.* As sure as night will come itself.

*King.* Get all your guards in readiness ; we will ourself  
 Disperse them afterwards ; and both be sure  
 To wear your thoughts within : I 'll act the rest.

[*Exeunt.*

*Enter PHILAN, ORSAMES, Courtiers.*

*2 Court.* Well, if there be not some great storm  
 towards,

Ne'er trust me ; Whisper (Court-thunder) is in  
 Every corner, and there has been to-day  
 About the town a murmuring  
 And buzzing, such as men use to make,  
 When they do fear to vent their fears.

*1 Court.* True, and all the statesmen hang down  
 their heads,  
 Like full-ear'd corn ; two of them,  
 Where I supp'd, ask'd what time of night it was,  
 And when 'twas told them, started, as if  
 They had been to run a race.

*2 Court.* The king, too (if you mark him), doth feign  
 mirth  
 And jollity ; but, through them both,  
 Flashes of discontent and anger make escapes.

*Ors.* Gentlemen ! 'tis pity heav'n  
 Design'd you not to make the almanacs.  
 You guess so shrewdly by the ill aspects,  
 Or near conjunctions of the great ones,  
 At what's to come still, that without all doubt  
 The country had been govern'd wholly by you,  
 And plough'd and reap'd accordingly. For me,  
 I understand this mystery as little  
 As the new love ;<sup>1</sup> and as I take it, too,  
 'Tis much about the time that everything  
 But owls and lovers take their rest ;  
 Good-night, Philan. Away.

[Exit.]

*1 Court.* 'Tis early yet ; let's go on the queen's  
 side,  
 And fool a little ; I love to warm myself,  
 Before I go to bed ; it does beget  
 Handsome and sprightly thoughts, and makes  
 Our dreams half-solid pleasures.

*2 Court.* Agreed.

[Exeunt.]

---

<sup>1</sup> [Platonism.]

## ACTUS III. SCŒNA I.

*Enter PRINCE, Conspirators.*

*Ther.* Couldst thou not find out Ziriff?

*1 Court.* Not speak with him, my lord,  
Yet I sent in by several men.

*Ors.* I wonder Iolas meets us not here, too.

*Ther.* 'Tis strange, but let's on now howe'er ;  
When fortunes, honour, life, and all's in doubt,  
Bravely to dare is bravely to get out.

[*The Guard upon them.*

*Ther.* Betray'd ! betray'd ! [Excursions.

*Ors.* Shift for yourself, sir, and let us alone ;  
We will secure your way, and make our own. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter the KING and Lords.*

*King.* Follow, lords, and see quick execution done ;  
Leave not a man alive.  
Who treads on fire, and does not put it out,  
Disperses fear in many sparks of doubt. [*Exeunt.*

*Enter Conspirators, and the Guard upon them.*

*Ors.* Stand, friends : an equal party. [*Fight.* Three of  
*Phi.* Brave Orsames, 'tis pleasure to die <sup>the Con-</sup>  
near thee. <sup>spirators</sup> fall, and

*Ors.* Talk not of dying, Philan ; we will live, <sup>three of</sup> And serve the noble prince again : we are <sup>the King's</sup> alone. <sup>side : Or-</sup>

Off then with thy disguise, and throw it in the bushes. <sup>sames</sup> and <sup>Phi-</sup>  
<sup>lan kill</sup> the rest.

Quick, quick ; before the torrent comes upon us : <sup>They</sup> throw off the rest.

We shall be straight good subjects, and I despair not <sup>their dis-</sup>

Of reward for this night's service. So <sup>guises.</sup>

We two now kill'd our friends ! 'tis hard,  
But 't must be so.

*Enter ARIASPEs, IOLAS, two Courtiers, part  
of the Guard.*

*Ari.* Follow, follow !

*Ors.* Yes, so you may now ; ye're not likely to  
overtake.

*Iol.* Orsames and Philan ! how came you hither ?

*Ors.* The nearest way, it seems ; you follow'd, thank  
you,

As if it had been through quicksets.

*Iol.* 'Sdeath, have they all escap'd ?

*Ors.* Not all, two of them we made sure ;  
But they cost dear : look here else.

*Ari.* Is the prince there ?

*Phi.* They are both princes, I think.  
They fought like princes, I am sure.

[*Iolas pulls off the vizors.*

*Iol.* Stephines and Odiris. We trifle.  
Which way took the rest ?

*Ors.* Two of them are certainly hereabouts.

*Ari.* Upon my life, they swam the river ;  
Come,<sup>1</sup> straight to horse, and follow o'er the bridge ;  
You and I, my lord, will search this place a little  
better.

*Ors.* Your Highness will, I hope, remember who  
were

The men were in —

*Ari.* O, fear not, your mistress shall know ye're  
valiant.

*Ors.* Philan, if thou lov'st me, let's kill them upon  
the place.

*Phi.* Fie ! thou now art wild indeed !

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, some.]

Thou taught'st me to be wise first,  
And I will now keep thee so. Follow, follow. [Exeunt.

*Enter AGLAURA with a lute.*

*The Prince comes and knocks within.*

*Ther.* Madam !

*Agl.* What wretch is this that thus usurps  
Upon the privilege of ghosts, and walks  
At midnight ?

*Ther.* Aglaura !

*Agl.* Betray me not,  
My willing sense, too soon ; yet, if that voice  
Be false.

*Ther.* Open, fair saint, and let me in.

*Agl.* It is the prince—  
As willingly as those,  
That cannot sleep do light ; welcome, sir. [Opens.  
Welcome above.

Bless me, what means this unsheathe'd minister of  
death ? [Spies his sword drawn.

If, sir, on me quick justice be to pass,  
Why this ? Absence, alas, or such strange looks  
As you now bring with you, would kill as soon.

*Ther.* Softly ! for I, like a hard-hunted deer,  
Have only herded here ; and though the cry  
Reach not our ears, yet am I followed close :  
O my heart ! since I saw thee  
Time has been strangely active, and begot  
A monstrous issue of unheard-of story :  
Sit ; thou shalt have it all ! nay, sigh not.  
Such blasts will hinder all the passage ;  
Dost thou remember how we parted last ?

*Agl.* Can I forget it, sir ?

*Ther.* That word of parting was ill-plac'd, I swear.  
It may be ominous ; but dost thou know  
Into whose hands I gave thee ?

*Agl.* Yes, into Ziriff's, sir.

*Ther.* That Ziriff was thy brother, brave Zorannes,  
Preserv'd by miracle in that sad day  
Thy father fell, and since thus in disguise  
Waiting his just revenge.

*Agl.* You do amaze me, sir.

*Ther.* And must do more, when I tell all the story.  
The king, the jealous king, knew of the marriage,  
And when thou thought'st thyself by my direction,  
Thou wert his prisoner.  
Unless I would renounce all right,  
And cease to love thee—O strange and fond request!—  
Immur'd thou must have been in some sad place,  
And lock'd for ever from Thersames' sight,  
For ever, and that unable to endure!  
This night I did attempt his life.

*Agl.* Was it well done, sir?

*Ther.* O no! extremely ill!  
For to attempt and not to act was poor.  
Here the dead-doing law (like ill-paid soldiers)  
Leaves the side it was on to join with power.  
Royal villany now will look so like to justice,  
That the times to come and curious posterity  
Will find no difference. Weep'st thou, Aglaura?  
Come to bed, my love!  
And we will there mock tyranny and fate.  
Those softer hours of pleasure and delight  
That, like so many single hearts, should have  
Adorn'd our thread of life, we will at once,  
By love's mysterious power and this night's help,  
Contract to one, and make but one rich draught  
Of all.

*Agl.* What mean you, sir?

*Ther.* To make myself incapable of misery,  
By taking strong preservatives of happiness:  
I would this night enjoy thee.

*Agl.* Do, sir, do what you will with me;

For I am too much yours to deny the right  
 However claim'd ; but——

*Ther.* But what, Aglaura ?

*Agl.* Gather not roses in a wet and frowning hour,  
 They'll lose their sweets then, trust me they will, sir.  
 What pleasure can love take to play his game out,  
 When death must keep the stakes ? [A noise without.  
 Hark, sir, grave-bringers and last minutes are at hand,  
 Hide, hide yourself ; for love's sake, hide yourself !

*Ther.* As soon the sun may hide himself as I.  
 The Prince of Persia hide himself !

*Agl.* O, talk not, sir ; the sun does hide himself,  
 When night and blackness comes.

*Ther.* Never, sweet ignorance, he shines in th' other  
 world then ;  
 And so shall I, if I set here in glory.  
 Enter, ye hasty seekers of life.

[Opens the door. Enter Ziriff.

Zorannes !

*Agl.* My brother !  
 If all the joy within me come not out,  
 To give a welcome to so dear an object,  
 Excuse it, sir ; sorrow locks up all doors.

*Zir.* If there be such a toy about you, sister,  
 Keep't for yourself, or lend it to the prince ;  
 There is a dearth of that commodity,  
 And you have made it, sir. Now,  
 What is the next mad thing you mean to do ?  
 Will you stay here ? when all the court's beset,  
 Like to a wood at a great hunt, and busy mischief  
 hates

To be in view, and have you in her power——

*Ther.* To me all this ?

For great grief's deaf, as well as it is dumb,  
 And drives no trade at all with counsel. Sir,  
 Why do you not tutor one that has the plague,  
 And see if he will fear an after-ague fit ;

Such is all mischief now to me, there is none left  
 Is worth a thought ; death is the worst I know,  
 And that, compar'd to shame, does look more lovely  
 now

Than a chaste mistress, set by a common woman ;  
 And I must court it, sir ?

*Zir.* No wonder, if that heav'n  
 Forsake us when we leave ourselves :  
 What is there done should feed such high despair ?  
 Were you but safe—

*Ag'l.* Dear sir, be rul'd ;  
 If love be love, and magic too,  
 As sure it is, where it is true ;  
 We then shall meet in absence, and in spite  
 Of all divorce freely enjoy together,  
 What niggard fate thus peevishly denies.

*Ther.* Yea : but, if pleasures be themselves but  
 dreams,  
 What then are the dreams of these to men ?  
 That monster, Expectation, will devour  
 All that is within our hope or power,  
 And ere we once can come to show how rich  
 We are, we shall be poor,  
 Shall we not, Zorannes ?

*Zir.* I understand not this.  
 In times of envious penury, such as these are,  
 To keep but love alive is fair ; we should not think  
 Of feasting him. Come, sir :  
 Here in these lodgings is a little door,  
 That leads unto another ; that again  
 Unto a vault that has his passage under  
 The little river, opening into the wood ;  
 From thence 'tis but some few minutes' easy business  
 Unto a servant's house of mine, who for his faith  
 And honesty hereafter must  
 Look big in story. There you are safe, however ;  
 And when this storm has met a little calm,

What wild desire dares whisper to itself,  
You may enjoy, and at the worst may steal.

*Ther.* What shall become of thee, Aglaura, then ?  
Shall I leave thee their rage's sacrifice ?  
And, like dull seamen threat'ned with a storm,  
Throw all away I have to save myself ?

*Agl.* Can I be safe, when you are not, my lord ?  
Knows love in us divided happiness ?  
Am I the safer for your being here ?  
Can you give that you have not for yourself ?  
My innocence is my best guard, and that your stay,  
Betraying it unto suspicion, takes away.  
If you did love me——

*Ther.* Grows that in question ? [kisses her] then 'tis  
time to part !  
When we shall meet again, heaven only knows ;  
And when we shall, I know we shall be old.  
Love does not calculate the common way ;  
Minutes are hours there, and the hours are days ;  
Each day's an year, and every year an age.  
What will this come to, think you ?

*Zir.* Would this were all the ill !  
For these are petty little harmless nothings.  
Time's horse runs full as fast hard-borne and curb'd,  
As in his full career, loose-rein'd and spurr'd.  
Come, come, let's away.

*Ther.* Happiness such as men, lost in misery,  
Would wrong in naming, 'tis so much above them.  
All that I want of it, all you deserve,  
Heaven send you in my absence !

*Agl.* And misery, such as witty malice would  
Lay out in curses on the thing it hates,  
Heaven send me in the stead, if when you are gone

[Leads him out, and enters up one of the vaults.]  
I welcome it but for your sake alone. [Exeunt.]

*Zir.* Stir not from hence, sir, till you hear from me,  
So, good-night, dear prince.

*Ther.* Good-night, dear friend.

*Zir.* When we meet next, all this will but advance.  
Joy never feasts so high,  
As when the first course is of misery.

[*Excunt.*]

#### ACTUS IV. SCENA I.

*Enter three or four Courtiers.*

*1 Court.* By this light, a brave prince !  
He made no more of the guard, than they  
Would of a tailor on a masque night, that has refused  
Trusting before.

*2 Court.* He's as active as he is valiant too ?  
Didst mark him how he stood like all the points  
O' th' compass, and, as good pictures,  
Had his eyes towards every man ?<sup>1</sup>

*3 Court.* And his sword too.  
All th' other side walk up and down the court now,  
As if they had lost their way, and stare,  
Like greyhounds, when the hare has taken the furze.

*1 Court.* Right.  
And have more troubles about them  
Than a serving-man that has forgot his message  
When he's come upon the place.

*2 Court.* Yonder's the king within chasing and  
swearing,  
Like an old falconer upon the first flight  
Of a young hawk, when some clown  
Has taken away the quarry from her ;  
And all the lords stand round about him,  
As if he were to be baited, with much more fear  
And at much more distance,

<sup>1</sup> [An allusion to the peculiarity of the portraits by Titian and other old masters, that, at whatever point you place yourself, they seem to be fixing their eyes on you.]

Than a country gentlewoman sees the lions the first time.

Look, he 's broke loose !

*Enter KING and Lords.*

*King.* Find him ; or, by Osiris' self, you are all traitors ;

And equally shall pay to justice ; a single man, And guilty too, break through you all !

*Enter ZIRIFF.*

*Zir.* Confidence,

Thou paint of women and the statesman's wisdom !

Valour for cowards, and of the guilty's innocence !

Assist me now,

Sir, send these starers off :

I have some business will deserve your privacy.

*King.* Leave us.

*Iol.* How the villain swells upon us !

[*Exeunt.*

*Zir.* Not to punish thought, or keep it

Long upon the rack of doubt, know, sir,

That, by corruption of the waiting-woman,

The common key of secrets, I have found

The truth at last, and have discovered all.

The prince, your son, was, by Aglaura's means,

Convey'd last night unto the cypress grove,

Through a close vault that opens in the lodgings.

He does intend to join with Carimania,

But ere he goes, resolves to finish all

The rites of love, and this night means

To steal what is behind.

*King.* How good is heav'n unto me,

That, when it gave me traitors for my subjects,

Would lend me such a servant !

*Zir.* How just, sir, rather,

That would bestow this fortune on the poor ;

And where your bounty had made debt so infinite

That it grew desperate their hope to pay it——

*King.* Enough of that. Thou dost but gently chide  
Me for a fault that I will mend ; for I  
Have been too poor and low in my rewards  
Unto thy virtue ; but to our business.  
The question is, whether we shall rely  
Upon our guards again.

*Zir.* By no means, sir.  
Hope on his future fortunes, or their love  
Unto his person, has so sicklied o'er  
Their resolutions, that we must not trust them.  
Besides, it were but needless here,  
He passes through the vault alone, and I  
Myself durst undertake that business,  
If that were all ; but there is something else  
This accident doth prompt my zeal to serve you in.  
I know you love Aglaura, sir, with passion,  
And would enjoy her ; I know besides  
She loves him so that whosoe'er shall bring  
The tidings of his death, must carry back  
The news of hers, so that your justice, sir,  
Must rob your hope. But there is yet a way——

*King.* Here, take my heart ; for I have hitherto  
Too vainly spent the treasure of my love.  
I 'll have it coin'd straight into friendship all,  
And make a present to thee.

*Zir.* If any part of this rich happiness,  
Fortune prepares now for you, shall owe itself  
Unto my weak endeavours, I 've enough.  
Aglaura without doubt this night expects  
The prince, and why should you not<sup>1</sup> then  
Supply his place by stealth, and in disguise ?

*King.* I apprehend thee, Ziriff ;  
But there 's difficulty.

*Zir.* Who trades in love must be an adventurer, sir.

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *You should not then.*]

But here is scarce enough to make the pleasure  
dearer,

I know the cave ; your brother and myself  
With Iolas (for these, we're sure, do hate him),  
With some few chosen more, betimes will wait  
The prince's passing through the vault ; if he  
Comes first, he's dead ; and if it be yourself,  
We will conduct you to the chamber door,  
And stand 'twixt you and danger afterwards.

*King.* I have conceiv'd of joy, and am grown great ;  
Till I have safe deliverance, time's a cripple  
And goes on crutches. As for thee, my Ziriff,  
I do here entertain a friendship with thee,  
Shall drown the memory of all patterns past.  
We will oblige by turns, and that so thick  
And fast, that curious studiers of it  
Shall not once dare to cast it up, or say  
By way of guess, whether thou or I  
Remain the debtor, when we come to die. [ *Exeunt.*

*Enter SEMANTHE, ORITHIE, PHILAN, ORSAMES,  
Lords and Ladies.*

*Ori.* Is the Queen ready to come out ?

*Phi.* Not yet, sure ; the king's brother is but newly  
entered.

*Sem.* Come, my lord, the song then.

*Ori.* The song.

*Ors.* A vengeance take this love ! it spoils a voice  
Worse than the losing of a maidenhead.

I have got such a cold with rising  
And walking in my shirt a-nights, that  
A bittern whooping in a reed is better music.

*Ori.* This modesty becomes you as ill, my lord,  
As wooing would us women ; pray, put 's not to it.

*Ors.* Nay, ladies, you shall find me  
As free as the musicians of the woods

Themselves ; what I have, you shall not need to call  
 for,  
 Nor shall it cost you anything.

## SONG.

*Why so pale and wan, fond lover ?  
 Prithee, why so pale ?  
 Will, when looking well can't move her,  
 Looking ill prevail ?  
 Prithee, why so pale ?*

*Why so dull and mute, young sinner ?  
 Prithee, why so mute ?  
 Will, when speaking well can't win her,  
 Saying nothing do't ?  
 Prithee, why so mute ?*

*Quit, quit, for shame, this will not move :  
 This cannot take her.  
 If of herself she will not love,  
 Nothing can make her :  
 The devil take her !*

*Ori.* I should have guess'd, it had been the issue of  
 Your brain, if I had not been told so.

*Ors.* A little foolish counsel, madam, I gave a friend  
 Of mine four or five years ago, when he was  
 Falling into a consumption.

*Enter QUEEN.*

*Orb.* Which of all you have seen the fair prisoner,  
 Since she was confin'd ?

*Sem.* I have, madam.

*Orb.* And how behaves she now herself ?

*Sem.* As one that had intrench'd so deep in innocence,

She fear'd no enemies : bears all quietly,  
And smiles at Fortune whilst she frowns on her.

*Orb.* So gallant ? I wonder, where the beauty lies,  
That thus inflames the royal blood ?

*Ori.* Faces, madam, are like books ; those that do study them

Know best ; and to say truth, 'tis still  
Much as it pleases the Courteous Reader.

*Orb.* These lovers sure are like astronomers,  
That, when the vulgar eye discovers but  
A sky above, studded with some few stars,  
Find out, besides, strange fishes, birds, and beasts.

*Sem.* As men in sickness, scorched into a raving,  
Do see the devil in all shapes and forms,  
When standers-by, wondering, ask where and when :  
So they in love : for all's but fever there,  
And madness too.

*Orb.* That's too severe, Semanthe ;  
But we will have your reasons in the park ;  
Are the doors open through the gardens ?

*Lord.* The king has newly led the way. [Exeunt.

*Enter ARIASPES : ZIRIFF with a warrant sealed.*

*Ari.* Thou art a tyrant, Ziriff : I shall die with joy.

*Zir.* I must confess, my lord, had but the prince's ills

Proved slight, and not thus dangerous,  
He should have ow'd to me—at least I would  
Have laid a claim unto his safety ; and,  
Like physicians that do challenge right  
In nature's cures, look'd for reward and thanks ;  
But, since 'twas otherwise, I thought it best  
To save myself, and then to save the state.

*Ari.* 'Twas wisely done.

*Zir.* Safely, I'm sure, my lord ! you know 'tis not

Our custom, where the king's dislike once swells to hate,

There to engage ourselves. Court friendship Is a cable, that in storms is ever cut, And I made bold with it ; here is the warrant seal'd ; And for the execution of it, if you think We are not strong enough, we may have Iolas ; for him the king did name.

*Ari.* And him I would have named.

*Zir.* But is he not too much the prince's, sir ?

*Ari.* He is as lights in scenes at masques, What glorious show soe'er he makes without, I that set him there, know why and how.

But here he is.

[Enter Iolas]

Come, Iolas ; and since the heav'n decreed The man whom thou shouldest envy, should be such, That all men else must do 't, be not ashamed Thou once wert guilty of it ; But bless them, that they give thee now a means To make a friendship with him, and vouchsafe To find thee out a way to love, where well Thou couldst not hate.

*Iol.* What means my lord ?

*Ari.* Here, here he stands that has preserv'd us all : That sacrific'd unto a public good The dearest private good we mortals have, Friendship : gave into our arms the prince, When nothing but the sword, perchance a ruin, Was left to do it.

*Iol.* How could I chide my love and my ambition now, That thrust upon me such a quarrel ? here I do vow —

*Zir.* Hold, do not vow, my lord, let it deserve it first, And yet (if heav'n bless honest men's intents), 'Tis not impossible. My lord, you will be pleased

T' inform him in particulars. I must be gone.  
The king, I fear, already has been left too long alone.

*Ari.* Stay : the hour and place.

*Zir.* Eleven, under the Terrace Walk ;  
I will not fail you there ; I had forgot.

[Goes out, returns back again.]

'T may be, the small remainder of those lost men,  
That were of the conspiracy, will come along with  
him :

'Twere best to have some chosen of the guard  
Within our call. [Exit Ziriff.]

*Ari.* Honest and careful Ziriff !

[*Iolas* stands musing.]

How now ? planet-struck !

*Iol.* This Ziriff will grow great with all the world.

*Ari.* Shallow man, short-sighteder than travellers  
in mists,

Or women that outlive themselves ; dost thou not see,  
That whilst he does prepare a tomb with one hand  
For his friend, he digs a grave with th' other for  
himself ?

*Iol.* How so ?

*Ari.* Dost think he shall not feel the weight of this,  
As well as poor Thersames ?

*Iol.* Shall we then kill him, too, at the same instant ?

*Ari.* And say the prince made an unlucky thrust.

*Iol.* Right.

*Ari.* Dull, dull, he must not die so uselessly.

As when we wipe off filth from any place,  
We throw away the thing that made it clean,  
So this once done, he's gone.

Thou know'st the people love the prince ; to their  
rage

Something the state must offer up. Who fitter  
Than thy rival and my enemy ?

*Iol.* Rare ! our witness will be taken.

*Ari.* Pish ! let me alone.

The giants that made mountains ladders,  
 And thought to take great love by force, were fools :  
 Not hill on hill, but plot on plot, does make  
 Us sit above, and laugh at all below us. [Exeunt.

*Enter AGLAURA and a Singing Boy.*

*Boy.* Madam, 'twill make you melancholy,  
 I'll sing the prince's song ; that's sad enough.

*Agl.* What you will, sir.

### SONG.

*No, no, fair heretic, it needs must be  
 But an ill love in me,  
 And worse for thee.*

*For were it in my power,  
 To love thee now this hour  
 More than I did the last :*

*I would then so fall,  
 I might not love at all.*

*Love that can flow, and can admit increase,  
 Admits as well an ebb, and may grow less.*

*True love is still the same ; the torrid zones,  
 And those more frigid ones,  
 It must not know.*

*For love, grown cold or hot,  
 Is lust or friendship, not  
 The thing we have.*

*For that's a flame would die,  
 Held down or up too high :*

*Then think I love more than I can express,  
 And would love more, could I but love thee  
 less.*

*Agl.* Leave me, for to a soul so out of tune,  
As mine is now, nothing is harmony :  
When once the mainspring, Hope, is fall'n into  
Disorder ; no wonder if the lesser wheels,  
Desire and Joy, stand still ; my thoughts, like bees,  
When they have lost their king, wander  
Confusedly up and down, and settle nowhere.

*Enter ORITHIE.*

Orithie, fly, fly the room,  
As thou wouldest shun the habitations  
Which spirits haunt, or where thy nearer friends  
Walk after death. Here is not only love,  
But love's plague too, misfortune ; and so high,  
That it is sure infectious.

*Ori.* Madam, so much more miserable am I this  
way than you,  
That should I pity you, I should forget myself,  
My sufferings are such, that with less patience  
You may endure your own, than give mine audience.  
There is that difference, that you may make  
Yours none at all, but by considering mine.

*Agl.* O, speak them quickly then ; the marriage-day  
To passionate lovers never was more welcome,  
Than any kind of ease would be to me now.

*Ori.* Could they be spoke, they were not then so  
great.  
I love, and dare not say I love ; dare not hope,  
What I desire ; yet still too must desire.  
And, like a starving man brought to a feast,  
And made say grace to what he ne'er shall taste,  
Be thankful after all, and kiss the hand,  
That made the wound thus deep.

*Agl.* 'Tis hard indeed ; but with what unjust scales  
Thou took'st the weight of our misfortunes,  
Be thine own judge now.  
Thou mourn'st for loss of that thou never hadst ;

Or if thou hadst a loss, it never was  
Of a Thersames.

Wouldst thou not think a merchant mad, Orithie,  
If thou shouldst see him weep and tear his hair,  
Because he brought not both the Indies home?  
And wouldst not think his sorrows very just,  
If, having fraught his ship with some rich treasure,  
He sunk i' th' very port? This is our case.

*Ori.* And do you think there is such odds in it?  
Would heaven we women could as easily change  
Our fortunes as, 'tis said, we can our minds.  
I cannot, madam, think them miserable,  
That have the prince's love.

*Agl.* He is the man then.  
Blush not, Orithie; 'tis a sin to blush  
For loving him, though none at all to love him.  
I can admit of rivalry without  
A jealousy, nay, shall be glad of it:  
We two will sit, and think, and sigh,  
And sigh, and talk of love and of Thersames.  
Thou shalt be praising of his wit, while I  
Admire he governs it so well:  
Like this thing said thus, th' other thing thus done,  
And in good language him for these adore,  
While I want words to do 't, yet do it more.  
Thus will we do till death itself shall us  
Divide, and then whose fate shall be to die  
First of the two, by legacy shall all  
Her love bequeath, and give her stock to her,  
That shall survive; for no one stock can serve  
To love Thersames so as he 'll deserve.

#### *Enter KING and ZIRIFF.*

*King.* What, have we here impossibility?  
A constant night, and yet within the room,  
That that can make the day before the sun,  
Silent, Aglaura, too?

*Agl.* I know not what you say :  
 Is 't to your pity or your scorn I owe  
 The favour of this visit, sir ; for such  
 My fortune is, it doth deserve them both ?

*King.* And such thy beauty is, that it makes  
 good

All fortunes ; sorrow looks lovely here ;  
 And there's no man that would not entertain  
 His griefs as friends, were he but sure they'd show  
 No worse upon him. But I forget myself ;  
 I came to chide.

*Agl.* If I have sinn'd so high,  
 That yet my punishment equals not my crime,  
 Do, sir. I should be loth to die in debt,  
 To justice how ill soe'er I paid  
 The scores of love.

*King.* And those indeed thou hast but paid in-  
 differently  
 To me. I did deserve at least fair death :  
 Not to be murthered thus in private.  
 That was too cruel, mistress.  
 And I do know thou dost repent, and wilt  
 Yet make me satisfaction.

*Agl.* What satisfaction, sir ?  
 I am no monster, never had two hearts ;  
 One is by holy vows another's now,  
 And could I give it you, you would not take it,  
 For 'tis alike impossible for me  
 To love again, as you love perjury.  
 O sir, consider, what a flame love is !  
 If by rude means you think to force a light,  
 That of itself it would not freely give,  
 You blow it out, and leave yourself i' th' dark.  
 The prince once gone, you may as well persuade  
 The light to stay behind, when the sun posts  
 To th' other world, as me. Alas, we two  
 Have mingled souls more than two meeting brooks ;

And whosoever is design'd to be  
 The murtherer of my lord (as sure there is),  
 Has anger'd heav'n so far, that 'twas decreed  
 Him to increase his punishment that way,  
 Would he but search the heart, when he has done,  
 He there would find Aglaura murthered too.

*King.* Thou hast o'ercome me, mov'd so hand-somely

For pity, that I will disinherit  
 The elder brother, and from this hour be  
 Thy convert, not thy lover.

*Zir.* Despatch. Away!

And he that brings news of the prince's welfare,  
 Look that he have the same reward we had decreed  
 To him brought tidings of his death.

'T must be a busy and bold hand, that would  
 Unlink a chain the gods themselves have made:  
 Peace to thy thoughts, Aglaura.

[Exit.  
*Ziriff steps back and speaks.*

*Zir.* Whate'er he says, believe him not, Aglaura;  
 For lust and rage ride high within him now.  
 He knows Thersames made th' escape from hence,  
 And does conceal it only for his ends;  
 For by the favour of mistake and night,  
 He hopes t' enjoy thee in the prince's room;  
 I shall be miss'd, else I would tell thee more;  
 But thou mayest guess, for our condition  
 Admits no middle ways; either we must  
 Send them to graves, or lie ourselves in dust. [Exit.

*[Aglaura stands still and studies.]*

*Agl.* Ha! 'tis a strange act thought puts me now  
 upon;

Yet sure my brother meant the self-same thing,  
 And my Thersames would have done 't for me:  
 To take his life, that seeks to take away  
 The life of life—honour—from me; and from  
 The world the life of honour—Thersames:

Must needs be something, sure, of kin to justice.  
 If I do fail, th' attempt howe'er was brave,  
 And I shall have at worst a handsome grave. [Exit.

*Enter IOLAS, SEMANTHE.*

[*Semanthe steps back, Iolas stays her.*

*Iol.* What, are we grown, Semanthe, night and day ?  
 Must one still vanish, when the other comes ?  
 Of all that ever love did yet bring forth  
 (And 't has been fruitful too) this is  
 The strangest issue.

*Sem.* What, my lord ?

*Iol.* Hate, Semanthe.

*Sem.* You do mistake ; if I do shun you, 'tis  
 As bashful debtors shun their creditors.  
 I cannot pay you in the self-same coin,  
 And am ashamed to offer any other.

*Iol.* It is ill done, Semanthe, to plead bankrupt,  
 When with such ease you may be out of debt.  
 In love's dominions native commodity  
 Is current payment ; change is all the trade,  
 And heart for heart the richest merchandise.

*Sem.* 'Twould here be mean, my lord, since mine  
 would prove  
 In your hands but a counterfeit, and yours in mine  
 Worth nothing. Sympathy, not greatness,  
 Makes those jewels rise in value.

*Iol.* Sympathy ? O, teach but yours to love then,  
 And two so rich no mortal ever knew.

*Sem.* That heart would love but ill that must be  
 taught ;  
 Such fires as these still kindle of themselves.

*Iol.* In such a cold and frozen place as is  
 Thy breast, how should they kindle of themselves,  
 Semanthe ?

*Sem.* Ask how the flint can carry fire within !  
 'Tis the least miracle that love can do.

*Iol.* Thou art thyself the greatest miracle,  
 For thou art fair to all perfection,  
 And yet dost want the greatest part of beauty—  
 Kindness. Thy cruelty (next to thyself)  
 Above all things on earth takes up my wonder.

*Sem.* Call not that cruelty, which is our fate.  
 Believe me, Iolas, the honest swain,  
 That from the brow of some steep cliff far off,  
 Beholds a ship labouring in vain against  
 The boisterous and unruly elements, ne'er had  
 Less power or more desire to help than I.  
 At every sigh I die, and every look  
 Does move ; and any passion you will have  
 But love, I have in store. I will be angry,  
 Quarrel with destiny and with myself,  
 That 'tis no better : be melancholy ;  
 And (though mine own disasters well might plead  
 To be in chief) yours only shall have place.  
 I'll pity, and (if that's too low) I'll grieve,  
 As for my sins, I cannot give you ease.  
 All this I do, and this I hope will prove  
 'Tis greater torment not to love, than love.      [Exit.]

*Iol.* So perishing sailors pray to storms,  
 And so they hear again. So men,  
 With death about them, look on physicians, that  
 Have given them o'er, and so they turn away :  
 Two fixed stars, that keep a constant distance,  
 And by laws made with themselves must know  
 No motion eccentric, may meet as soon as we :  
 The anger that the foolish sea does show,  
 When it does brave it out, and roar against  
 A stubborn rock that still denies it passage,  
 Is not so vain and fruitless as my prayers.  
 Ye mighty powers of love and fate, where is  
 Your justice here ? It is thy part (fond boy),  
 When thou dost find one wounded heart, to make  
 The other so ; but if thy tyranny

Be such, that thou wilt leave one breast to hate,  
 If we must live, and this survive,  
 How much more cruel's fate ?

[*Exit.*]

### ACTUS V. SCENA I.

*Enter ZIRIFF, ARIASPES, IOLAS.*

*Iol.* A glorious night !

*Ari.* Pray heav'n it prove so.  
 Are we not there yet ?

*Zir.* 'Tis about this hollow. [Enter the cave.

*Ari.* How now ! what region are we got into ?  
 Th' inheritance of night !  
 Are we not mistaken a turning, Ziriff,  
 And stept into some melancholy devil's territory ?  
 Sure 'tis a part of the first Chaos,  
 That would endure no change.

*Zir.* No matter, sir, 'tis as proper for our purpose  
 As the lobby for the waiting-woman's.  
 Stay you here : I 'll move a little backward ;  
 And so we shall be sure to put him past  
 Retreat. You know the word, if't be the prince.

[Goes to the mouth of the cave.]

*Enter KING.*

Here, sir, follow me, all 's quiet yet.

*King.* He's not come then ?

*Zir.* No.

*King.* Where 's Ariaspes ?

*Zir.* Waiting within.

[He leads him on : steps behind him, gives  
 the false word : they kill the King.]

*Iol.* I do not like this waiting,  
 Nor this fellow's leaving us.

*Ari.* This place does put odd thoughts into thee.

Then thou art in thine own nature, too, as jealous  
As either love or honour. Come, wear thy sword in  
readiness,

And think how near we are a crown.

*Zir.* Revenge !

Lo, let us drag him to the light, and search  
His pockets ; there may be papers there, that will  
Discover the rest of the conspirators.

Iolas, your hand.

[Draw him out.]

*Iol.* Whom have we here ? the king !

*Zir.* Yes, and Zorannes too. Hallo, ho !

[Enter Pasithas and others.]

Unarm them.

D' ye stare ?

This for my father's injuries and mine !

[Points to the King's dead body.]

Half love's, half duty's sacrifice :

This for the noble prince, an offering to friendship !

[Runs at Iolas.]

*Iol.* Basely and tamely.

[Dies.]

*Ari.* What hast thou done ?

*Zir.* Nothing ! kill'd a traitor.

So, away with them ; and leave us.

Pasithas, be only you in call.

*Ari.* What, dost thou pause ?

Hast thou remorse already, murtherer ?

*Zir.* No, fool : 'tis but a difference I put  
Betwixt the crimes : Orbella is our quarrel ;  
And I do hold it fit, that love should have  
A nobler way of justice than revenge  
Or treason. Follow me out of the wood,  
And thou shalt be master of this again :  
And then best arm and title take.

[They go out and enter again.]

There !

[Gives him his sword.]

*Ari.* Extremely good ! Nature took pains, I swear :  
The villain and the brave are mingled handsomely.

*Zir.* 'Twas fate that took it, when it decreed  
We two should meet, nor shall they mingle now:  
We are brought together straight to part. [Fight.]

*Ari.* Some devil, sure, has borrowed this shape.

[Pause.]

My sword ne'er stay'd thus long to find an entrance.

*Zir.* To guilty men all that appears is devil;  
Come, trifler, come. [Fight again.] *Ariaspes falls.*

*Ari.* Whither, whither, thou fleeting coward life?  
Bubble of time, Nature's shame, stay a little, stay;  
Till I have look'd myself into revenge,  
And star'd this traitor to a carcase first.

It will not be. [Falls.]

The crown, the crown, too,  
Now is lost, for ever lost. O!  
Ambition's but an *ignis fatuus*, I see,  
Misleading fond mortality,  
That hurries us about, and sets us down.

Just—where—we—first—begun. [Dies.]

*Zir.* What a great spreading mighty thing this was,  
And what a nothing now! how soon poor man  
Vanishes into his noontide shadow!

But hopes o'erfed have seldom better done. [Holloes.]

### Enter PASITHAS.

Take up this lump of vanity and honour,  
And carry it the back way to my lodging,  
There may be use of statesmen when they're dead;  
So. For the Citadel now; for in such times  
As these, when the unruly multitude  
Is up in swarms, and no man knows which way  
They'll take, 'tis good to have retreat. [Exeunt.]

### Enter THERSAMES.

*Ther.* The dog-star's got up high; it should be  
late;  
And sure by this time every waking ear

And watchful eye is charm'd; and yet methought  
 A noise of weapons struck my ear just now!  
 'Twas but my fancy, sure, and were it more,  
 I would not tread one step that did not lead  
 To my Aglaura, stood all his guard betwixt,  
 With lightning in their hands.

Danger! thou dwarf dress'd up in giant's clothes,  
 That show'st far off still greater than thou art,  
 Go, terrify the simple and the guilty, such  
 As with false optics still do look upon thee.  
 But fright not lovers; we dare look on thee  
 In thy worst shape, and meet thee in them too.  
 Stay. These trees I made my mark; 'tis hereabouts,  
 Love, guide me but [a]right this night,  
 And lovers shall restore thee back again  
 Those eyes the poets took so boldly from thee. [*Exit.*]

*AGLAURA with a torch in one hand, and a dagger in the other.*

*Agl.* How ill this does become this hand, how much  
 the worse  
 This suits with this! one of the two should go.  
 The she within me says, it must be this:  
 Honour says this; and honour is Thersames' friend.  
 What is that she then? it is not a thing  
 That sets a price, not upon me, but on  
 Life in my name, leading me into doubt,  
 Which, when 't has done, it cannot light me out.  
 For fear does drive to fate, or fate, if we  
 Do fly, o'ertakes, and holds us, till or death  
 Or infamy, or both, doth seize us. [*Puts out the light.*]  
 Ha! would 'twere in again!  
 Antics and strange misshapes,  
 Such as the porter to my soul, mine eye,  
 Was ne'er acquainted with, fancy lets in,  
 Like a distracted multitude, by some strange accident  
 Piec'd together. Fear now afresh comes on,

And charges love too home.  
 He comes ! he comes !  
 Woman, if thou wouldest be the subject of man's  
     wonder,  
 Not his scorn hereafter, now show thyself.

*Enter PRINCE, rising from the vault; she stabs him  
 two or three times, he falls, she goes back to her  
 chamber.*

Sudden and fortunate !  
 My better angel, sure, did both infuse  
 A strength, and did direct it.

*Enter ZIRIFF.*

*Zir.* Aglaura !

*Agl.* Brother !

*Zir.* The same.

So slow to let in such a long'd-for guest ?  
 Must joy stand knocking, sister ? come, prepare,  
     prepare :

The King of Persia's coming to you straight !  
 The king ! mark that.

*Agl.* I thought how poor the joys you brought  
     with you,

Were in respect of those that were with me.  
 Joys are our hopes stript of their fears,  
 And such are mine ; for know, dear brother,  
 The king is come already, and is gone. Mark that.

*Zir.* Is this instinct or riddle ? what king ? how  
     gone ?

*Agl.* The cave will tell you more —

*Zir.* Some sad mistake : thou hast undone us all.

[Goes out, enters hastily again.]

The prince, the prince ! cold as the bed of earth he  
     lies

Upon, as senseless too ! death hangs upon his lips,  
 Like an untimely frost upon an early cherry.

The noble guest (his soul) took it so ill,  
 That you should use his old acquaintance so,  
 That neither prayers nor tears can e'er persuade  
 Him back again. [Aglaura swoons; he rubs her.  
 Hold, hold! we cannot sure part thus!  
 Sister! Aglaura! Thersames is not dead,  
 It is the prince that calls.

*Agl.* The prince? where?  
 Tell me, or I will straight go back again  
 Into those groves of jessamine thou took'st me from,  
 And find him out, or lose myself for ever.

*Zir.* For ever? Ay, there's it!  
 For in those groves thou talk'st of,  
 There are so many byways and odd turnings,  
 Leading unto such wide and dismal places,  
 That should we go without a guide, or stir,  
 Before heav'n calls, 'tis strongly to be feared,  
 We there should wander up and down for ever,  
 And be benighted to eternity.

*Agl.* Benighted to eternity? What's that?  
*Zir.* Why, 'tis to be benighted to eternity,  
 To sit i' th' dark, and do I know not what;  
 Unriddle at our own sad cost and charge  
 The doubts the learned here do only move.

*Agl.* What place have murtherers, brother, there?  
 for, sure,  
 The murtherer of the prince must have  
 A punishment that heav'n is yet to make.

*Zir.* How is religion fool'd betwixt our loves  
 And fears! Poor girl, for ought that thou hast  
 done,  
 Thy chaplets may be fair and flourishing,  
 As his in the Elysium.

*Agl.* Do you think so?  
*Zir.* Yes, I do think so.  
 The juster judges of our actions, would they  
 Have been severe upon our weaknesses,

Would, sure, have made us stronger. Fie ! those tears ?

A bride upon the marriage-day as properly  
Might shed as thou ; here widows do 't,  
And marry next day after. To such a  
Funeral as this there should be nothing common.  
We 'll mourn him so that those, that are alive,  
Shall think themselves more buried far than he ;  
And wish to have his grave, to find his obsequies :  
But stay ; the body ?

*[Brings up the body ; she swoons and dies.]*

Again ! sister ! Aglaura !

O, speak once more, once more look out, fair soul.  
She 's gone, irrevocably gone ;  
And winging now the air like a glad bird  
Brok'n from some cage :  
Poor bankrupt heart, when 't had  
Not wherewithal to pay to sad  
Disaster all that was its due, it broke !  
Would mine would do so too. My soul  
Is now within me, like a well-mettled hawk  
On a blind falc'ner's fist : methinks I feel  
It baiting to be gone : and yet I have  
A little foolish business here on earth.  
I will despatch.

*[Exit.]*

*Enter PASITHAS, with the body of Ariaspes.*

*Pas.* Let me be like my burthen, if I had not here  
As lief kill two of the blood royal for him,  
As carry one of them ; these gentlemen of high  
Actions are three times as heavy after death, as your  
private retir'd ones ; look if he be not reduc'd to the  
state of a courtier of the second form now, and cannot  
stand upon his own legs, nor do anything without  
help ? Hum ! and what 's become of the great prince,  
in prison as they call it now, the toy within us, that  
makes us talk and laugh, and fight : ay, why, there 's

it ; well, let him be what he will, and where he will,  
I'll make bold with the old tenement here. Come,  
sir, come along. [Exit.]

*Enter ZIRIFF.*

*Zir.* All's fast too here ; they sleep to-night  
I' their winding-sheets, I think, there's such  
A general quiet. O, here is light, I warrant ;  
For lust does take as little rest as care or age :  
Courting her glass, I swear—fie ! that's a flatterer,  
madam,  
In me you shall see trulier what you are. [Knocks.]

*Enter the QUEEN.*

*Orb.* What make you up at this strange hour, my lord ?

*Zir.* My business is my boldness' warrant, madam.  
And I could well afford t' have been without  
It now, had heav'n so pleas'd.

*Orb.* 'Tis a sad prologue :  
What follows, in the name of virtue ?

*Zir.* The king.

*Orb.* Ay, what of him ? [he] is well, is he not ?

*Zir.* Yes.

If to be free from the great load  
We sweat and labour under here on earth,  
Be to be well, he is.

*Orb.* Why, he's not dead, is he ?

*Zir.* Yes, madam, slain ; and the prince too.

*Orb.* How ? where ?

*Zir.* I know not ; but dead they are.

*Orb.* Dead ?

*Zir.* Yes, madam.

*Orb.* Didst see them dead ?

*Zir.* As I see you alive.

*Orb.* Dead !

*Zir.* Yes, dead !

*Orb.* Well, we must all die ;  
The sisters spin no cables for us mortals ;  
They're Thread, and Time, and Chance.  
Trust me, I could weep now ;  
But wat'ry distillations do but ill on graves :  
They make the lodging colder. [She knocks.]

*Zir.* What would you, madam ?

*Orb.* Why, my friends, my lord,  
I would consult, and know what's to be done.

*Zir.* Madam, 'tis not so safe to raise the court,  
Things thus unsettled : if you please to have—

*Orb.* Where's Ariaspes ?

*Zir.* In's dead sleep by this time, I'm sure.

*Orb.* I know he is not ! find him instantly.

*Zir.* I'm gone. [Turns back again.]

But, madam, why make you [a] choice of him,  
From whom, if the succession meet disturbance,  
All must come of danger ?

*Orb.* My lord, I am not yet so wise, as to  
Be jealous ; pray, dispute no further.

*Zir.* Pardon me, madam, if, before I go,  
I must unlock a secret unto you : such a one  
As, while the king did breathe, durst know no air—  
Zorannes lives !

*Orb.* Ha !

*Zir.* And, in the hope of such a day as this,  
Has ling'red out a life, snatching, to feed  
His almost famished eyes,  
Sights now and then of you in a disguise.

*Orb.* Strange ! this night is big with miracle.

*Zir.* If you did love him, as they say you did,  
And do so still, 'tis now within your power—

*Orb.* I would it were, my lord ; but I am now  
No private woman. If I did love him once  
(And 'tis so long ago, I have forgot),  
My youth and ignorance may well excuse 't.

*Zir.* Excuse it ?

*Orb.* Yes, excuse it, sir.

*Zir.* Though I confess I lov'd his father much,  
And pity him, yet having offer'd it  
Unto your thoughts, I have discharg'd a trust ;  
And zeal shall stray no further.

Your pardon, madam. [Exit. Queen studies.

*Orb.* Maybe it is a plot to keep off Ariaspes'  
Greatness ; which he must fear, because he knows  
He hates him : for these are statesmen ;  
That, when time has made bold with king<sup>1</sup> and  
subject,  
Throwing down all fence that stood betwixt their  
power  
And others' right, are on a change,  
Like wanton salmons coming in with floods,  
That leap o'er wires and nets, and make their way  
To be at the return to every one a prey.

*Enter ZIRIFF and PASITHAS ; they throw down the dead  
body of Ariaspes.*

*Orb.* Ha ! murthered too ! Treason, treason !

*Zir.* But such another word, and half so loud,  
And thou'r't —

*Orb.* Why ? thou wilt not murther me too ?  
Wilt thou, villain ?

*Zir.* I do not know my temper ; [Discovering himself.]  
Look here, vain thing, and see thy sins full blown :  
There's scarce a part in all this face thou hast  
Not been forsown by, and heav'n forgive thee  
for't !

For thee I lost a father, country, friends,  
Myself almost, for I lay buried long ;  
And when there was no use thy love could pay

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *the king.*]

Too great, thou mad'st the principal away.  
 Had I but stay'd, and not begun revenge,  
 Till thou hadst made an end of changing,  
 I had had the kingdom to have kill'd.  
 As wantons, ent'ring a garden, take  
 The first fair flower they meet, and treasure  
 It in their laps : then seeing more, do make  
 Fresh choice again, throwing in one and one,  
 Till at the length the first poor flower, o'ercharg'd  
 With too much weight, withers and dies :  
 So hast thou dealt with me, and having kill'd  
 Me first, I'll kill—

*Orb.* Hold, hold ! Not for my sake,  
 But Orbella's, sir, a bare and single death  
 Is such a wrong to justice, I must needs  
 Except against it.  
 Find out a way to make me long a-dying ;  
 For death's no punishment : it is the sense,  
 The pains and fears afore, that makes a death.  
 To think what I had had, had I had you :  
 What I have lost in losing of myself,  
 Are deaths far worse than any you can give.  
 Yet kill me quickly ; for, if I have time,  
 I shall so wash this soul of mine with tears,  
 Make it so fine, that you would be afresh  
 In love with it, and so perchance I should  
 Again come to deceive you.

[She rises up weeping, and hanging down her head.]

*Zir.* So rises day, blushing at night's deformity :  
 And so the pretty flowers, blubber'd with dew,  
 And overwash'd with rain, hang down their heads.  
 I must not look upon her. [She goes towards him.]

*Orb.* Were but the lilies in this face as fresh  
 As are the roses ; had I but innocence  
 Join'd to these<sup>1</sup> blushes, I should then be bold ;

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *their.*]

For when they went on begging, they were ne'er  
Denied. 'Tis but a parting kiss, sir.

*Zir.* I dare not grant it.

*Orb.* Your hand, sir, then ; for that's a part I shall  
Love after death (if after death we love),  
'Cause it did right the wrong'd Zorannes here.

[*Steps to him and opens the box  
of poison; Zorannes falls.*

Sleep, sleep for ever ; and forgotten too,  
All but thy ills, which may succeeding time  
Remember, as the seaman does his marks,  
To know what to avoid. May at thy name  
All good men start, and bad too ; may it prove  
Infection to the air, that people dying of it  
May help to curse thee for me.

[*Turns to the body of Ariaspes.*

Could I but call thee back as eas'ly now !  
But that's a subject for our tears, not hopes !  
There is no piecing tulips to their stalks,  
When they are once divorc'd by a rude hand ;  
All we can do is to preserve in water  
A little life, and give by courteous art,  
What scanted nature wants commission for.  
That thou shalt have : for to thy memory  
Such tribute of moist sorrow I will pay,  
And that so purifi'd by love, that on thy grave  
Nothing shall grow but violets and primroses,  
Of which some shall be  
Of the mysterious number, so that lovers shall  
Come hither, not as to a tomb, but to an oracle.

[*She knocks, and raises the court.*

*Enter Ladies and Courtiers, as out of their beds.*

*Orb.* Come, come ! help me to weep myself away,  
And melt into a grave ; for life is but  
Repentance' nurse, and will conspire with memory  
To make my hours my tortures.

*Ori.* What scene of sorrow's this? Both dead?

*Orb.* Dead? Ay, and 'tis but half death's triumphs  
this;

The king and prince lie somewhere, just  
Such empty trunks as these.

*Ori.* The prince?

Then in grief's burthen I must bare a part.

*Sem.* The noble Ariaspes: valiant Ziriff too.

[Weeps.]

*Orb.* Weep'st thou for him, fond prodigal? dost  
know,

On whom thou spend'st thy tears? This is the man,  
To whom we owe our ills; the false Zorannes  
Disguised, not lost; but kept alive by some.

*Enter PASITHAS, surveys the bodies, finds his master.*

Incensed power, to punish Persia thus!

He would have kill'd me too; but heav'n was just,  
And furnish'd me with means to make him pay  
His<sup>1</sup> score of vill'ny, ere he could do more.

*Pas.* Were you his murth'rer then?

[*Pasithas runs to her, kills her, and flies.*]

*Ori.* Ah me! the queen!

[*They rub her till she comes to herself.*]

*Sem.* How do you, madam?

*Orb.* Well; but I was better and shall—— [Dies.]

*Sem.* O, she is gone for ever!

*Enter Lords in their nightgowns, ORSAMES, PHILAN.*

*Ors.* What have we here? A churchyard?  
Nothing but silence and [the] grave?

*Ori.* O, here has been, my lords,  
The blackest night the Persian world e'er knew;  
The king and prince are not themselves exempt

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *this.*]

From this arrest ; but pale and cold as these,  
Have measured out their lengths.

*Lords.* Impossible ! which way ?

*Sem.* Of that we are as ignorant as you ;  
For, while the queen was telling of a story,  
An unknown villain here has hurt her so  
That, like a sickly taper, she but made  
One flash, and so expir'd.

[Enter bearing in Pasithas.

*Phi.*

Here he is,

But no confession.

*Ori.* Torture must force him then :  
Though 'twill indeed but weakly satisfy  
To know, now they are dead, how they did die.

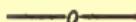
*Phi.* Come, take the bodies up, and let us all  
Go drown ourselves in tears. This massacre  
Has left so torn a state, that 'twill be policy,  
As well as debt, to weep till we are blind ;  
For who would see the miseries behind ?

## *EPILOGUE.*

—o—

OUR play is done, and yours doth now begin :  
What different fancies people now are in :  
How strange and odd a mingle it would make,  
If, ere they rise, 'twere possible to take  
All votes.—  
But as when an authentic watch is shown,  
Each man winds up and rectifies his own,  
So in our very judgments. For there sits  
A grave grand jury on it of town wits,  
And they give up their verdict ; then again  
The other jury of the court comes in  
(And that's of life and death) ; for each man sees,  
That oft condemns, what th' other jury frees.  
Some three days hence, the ladies of the town  
Will come to have a judgment of their own.  
And after them, their servants ; then the city,  
For that is modest, and is still last witty.  
'Twill be a week at least yet, ere they have  
Resolv'd to let it live, or give 't a grave.  
Such difficulty there is to unite  
Opinion, or bring it to be right.

*EPILOGUE FOR THE COURT.*



SIR,

THAT the abusing of your ear 's a crime,  
Above th' excuse any six lines in rhyme  
Can make, the poet knows : I am but sent  
T' intreat he may not be a president,<sup>1</sup>  
For he does think, that in this place there be  
Many have done 't as much and more than he.  
But here 's, he says, the difference of the fates,  
He begs a pardon after 't, they estates.

---

<sup>1</sup> [Precedent.]

A G L A U R A  
PRESENTED AT THE COURT.

*Aglavra. Presented at the Court by His Majesties Servants.*  
*Written by Sir John Suckling.*



## *PROLOGUE.*

—o—

'**F**ORE love, a mighty sessions, and (I fear)  
Though kind last 'sizes, 'twill be now severe ;  
For it is thought, and by judicious men,  
Aglaura 'scap'd only by dying then.  
But 'twould be vain for me now to endear,  
Or speak unto my Lords, the Judges here,  
They hold their places by condemning still,  
And cannot show at once mercy and skill ;  
For wit's so cruel unto wit, that they  
Are thought to want, that find not want i' th' play.  
But, ladies, you who never lik'd a plot,  
But where the servant had his mistress got,  
And whom to see a lover die it grieves,  
Although 'tis in worse language that he lives,  
Will like 't, we're confident, since here will be,  
That your sex ever lik'd, variety !

## *PROLOGUE TO THE COURT.*

—o—

'TIS strange, perchance you'll think, that she that died  
At Christmas, should at Easter be a bride :  
But 'tis a privilege the poets have,  
To take the long-since dead out of the grave.  
Nor is this all ; old heroes asleep  
'Twixt marble coverlets, and six foot deep  
In earth, they boldly wake, and make them do  
All they did living here : sometimes more too.  
They give fresh life, reverse and alter fate,  
And (yet more bold) Almighty-like create,  
And out of nothing, only to deify  
Reason and Reason's friend, Philosophy ;  
Fame, honour, valour : all that's great or good,  
Or is at least 'mongst us so understood—  
They give ; heav'n's theirs ; no handsome woman dies,  
But, if they please, is straight some star i' th' skies.  
But O, how those poor men of metre do  
Flatter themselves with that that is not true !  
And 'cause they can trim up a little prose,  
And spoil it handsomely, vainly suppose  
They're omnipotent, can do all those things  
That can be done only by Gods and kings !  
Of this wild guilt he fain would be thought free,  
That writ this play, and therefore (sir) by me  
He humbly begs you would be pleas'd to know,  
Aglaura's but repriev'd this night ; and though  
She now appears upon a poet's call,  
She's not to live, unless you say she shall.



## *Aglaura*

*PRESERNTED AT THE COURT.*

—o—

### ACTUS V. SCENA I.

*Enter ZIRIFF, PASITHAS, and Guard : he places 'em and Exit. A state set out.*

*Enter ZIRIFF, IOLAS, ARIASPES.*

*Iol.* A glorious night !

*Ari.* Pray heav'n it prove so !

Are we not there yet ?

*Zir.* 'Tis about this hollow.

[*They enter the cave.*

*Ari.* How now ! what region are we got into,  
Th' inheritance of night ?

Have we not mistaken a turning, Ziriff,  
And stepp'd into the confines of some melancholy  
Devil's territory ?

*Iol.* Sure, 'tis a part of the first Chaos,  
That would not suffer any change.

*Zir.* No matter, sir, 'tis as proper for our  
Purpose, as the lobby for the waiting-woman's.  
Stay you here ; I 'll move a little backward ;

And so we shall be sure to put him past  
Retreat. You know the word, if it be the prince?

[*Ziriff goes to the door.*

*Enter KING.*

*Zir.* Here, sir, follow me; all's quiet yet.

*King.* Is he not come then?

*Zir.* No.

*King.* Where's Ariaspes?

*Zir.* Waiting within.

*Iol.* I do not like this waiting,  
Nor this fellow's leaving of us.

*Ari.* This place does put odd thoughts into thee.  
Then thou art in thine own nature, too,  
As jealous as love or honour; wear thy sword  
In readiness, and think how near we are a crown.

*Zir.* Revenge! [Guard seizeth on 'em.

*King.* Ha! what's this?

*Zir.* Bring them forth. [Brings them forth.

*Ari.* The king!

*Zir.* Yes, and the prince's friend. [Discovering himself.  
D' you know this face?

*King.* Zorannes!

*Zor.* The very same,  
The wrong'd Zorannes! King, d' you stare?  
Away with them, where I appointed.

*King.* Traitors!  
Let me go, villain, thou dar'st not do this.

*Zor.* Poor counterfeit, how fain thou now wouldst  
act a king,

And art not! Stay you [to *Ariaspes*]. Unhand him  
[in a whisper.]

Leave us now. [*Exeunt. Manent Ariasp. et Zoran.*

*Ari.* What does this mean? Sure  
He does intend the crown to me!

*Zor.* We are alone,  
Follow me out of the wood, and thou shalt be

Master of this again ; and then best arm  
And title take it !

*Ari.* Thy offer is so noble,  
In gratitude I cannot but propound  
Gentler conditions ; we will divide the empire.

*Zor.* Now, by my father's soul, I do almost repent  
My first intents, and now could kill thee scurvily,  
For thinking, if I'd a mind to rule, I would not  
rule

Alone. Let not thy easy faith (lost man)  
Fool thee into so dull an heresy ;  
Orbella is our quarrel, and I have thought it fit  
That love should have a nobler way of justice,  
Than revenge or treason.

If thou dar'st die handsomely, follow me.

[*Exeunt, and enter both again.*

*Zor.* There. [*Gives him his sword.*

*Ari.* Extremely good ; nature took pains, I swear,  
The villain and the brave are mingled handsomely.

*Zir.* 'Twas fate that took it, when that it decreed  
We two should meet ; nor shall they mingle now :  
We are but brought together straight to part. [*Fight.*

*Ari.* Some devil sure has borrowed this shape,  
My sword ne'er stay'd thus long to find an entrance.

*Zir.* To guilty men all that appears is devil ;  
Come, trifler, come. [*Fight.*

*Ari.* Dog, thou hast it.

*Zir.* Why, then, it seems my star's as great as his,  
I smile at thee.

[*Ariaspes pants, and runs at him to catch his sword.*  
Thou now wouldest have me kill thee,  
And 'tis a courtesy I cannot afford thee.  
I have bethought myself, there will be use  
Of thee. Pasithas, to the rest with him. [*Exit.*

[*Enter Pasithas and two of the  
Guard, and go out again.*

*Enter THERSAMES.*

*Ther.* The dog-star's got up high ; it should be late ;  
 And sure by this time every waking ear  
 And watchful eye is charm'd : and yet methought  
 A noise of weapons struck my ear just now.  
 'Twas but my fancy, sure ; and were it more,  
 I would not tread one step that did not lead  
 To my Aglaura, stood all his guard betwixt,  
 With lightning in their hands.  
 Danger, thou dwarf dress'd up in giant's clothes,  
 That show'st far off still greater than thou art,  
 Go, terrify the simple and the guilty, such  
 As with false optics still do look upon thee !  
 But fright not lovers : we dare look on thee  
 In thy worst shapes, and meet thee in them too.  
 Stay, these trees I made my mark, 'tis hereabouts.  
 Love, guide me but [a]right this night,  
 And lovers shall restore thee back again  
 Those eyes the poets took so boldly from thee. [*Exit.*]

*A Taper. Table out.*

*Enter AGLAURA with a torch in one hand, and a dagger in the other.*

*Agl.* How ill this does become this hand ! much worse  
 This suits with this ! one of the two should go.  
 The she within me says it must be this :  
 Honour says this ; and honour is Thersames' friend.  
 What is that she then ? is it not a thing  
 That sets a price, not upon me, but on  
 Life in my name, leading me into doubt,  
 Which, when 't has done, it cannot light me out ?  
 For fear does drive to fate, or fate, if we  
 Do fly, o'ertakes and holds us, till or death,  
 Or infamy, or both, do seize us. [*Puts out the light.*]

Ha! would 'twere in again. Antics and strange  
missshapes,  
Such as the porter of my soul—mine eye,  
Was ne'er acquainted with, fancy lets in,  
Like a disrouted multitude, by some strange accident  
Piec'd together. Fear now afresh comes on,  
And charges love too home. He comes, he comes !

[*A little noise below.*

Woman, if thou wouldest be the subject of man's  
wonder,  
Not his scorn hereafter, now show thyself !

*Enter THERSAMES from the vaults ; she stabs him,  
as he riseth.*

*Ther.* Unkindly done.

*Agl.* The prince's voice ! defend it, goodness !

*Ther.* What art thou that thus poorly hast  
Destroy'd a life ?

*Agl.* O sad mistake, 'tis he !

*Ther.* Hast thou no voice ?

*Agl.* I would I had not, nor a being neither.

*Ther.* Aglaura ? it cannot be.

*Agl.* O, still believe so, sir ;  
For 'twas not I indeed, but fatal love.

*Ther.* Love's wounds us'd to be gentler than these  
were,

The pains they give us have some pleasure  
In them, and that these have not.

*Enter ZIRIFF with a taper.*

O, do not say 'twas you, for that does wound  
Again : guard me, my better angel :  
Do I wake ? my eyes (since I was man), ne'er met  
With any object gave them so much trouble,  
I dare not ask neither to be satisfied,  
She looks so guiltily.

[*Aside.*

*Agl.* Why do you stare and wonder at a thing,  
That you yourself have made thus miserable.

*Zir.* Good gods, and I o' the party too ! [Aside.]

*Agl.* Did you not tell me, that the king this night  
Meant to attempt mine honour ; that our condition  
Would not admit of middle ways, and that  
We must send them to graves, or lie  
Ourselves in dust ?

*Zir.* Unfortunate mistake !

[*Ziriff knocks.*]

*Enter PASITHAS.*

I never did intend our safety by thy hands :  
Pasithas, go instantly and fetch Andrages  
From his bed. How is it with you, sir ?

*Ther.*

As

With the besieg'd : my soul is so beset,  
It does not know whether 't had best to make  
A desperate sally out by this port  
Or not ?

*Agl.* Sure, I shall turn statue here !

*Ther.* If thou doest love me, weep not, Aglaura :  
All those are drops of blood, and flow from me.

*Zir.* Now all the gods defend this way  
Of expiation. Thinkest thou thy crime,  
Aglaura, would be less by adding to it ?  
Or canst thou hope to satisfy those powers,  
Whom great sins do displease, by doing greater ?

*Agl.* Discourteous courtesy : I had  
No other means left me than this, to let  
Thersames know I would do nothing to him  
I would not do unto myself, and that  
Thou tak'st away.

*Ther.* Friend, bring me a little nearer,  
I find a kind of willingness to stay,  
And find that willingness something obey'd,  
My blood, now it persuades itself you did  
Not call in earnest, maketh not such haste.

*Agl.* O my dearest lord, this kindness is  
So full of cruelty, puts such an ugliness  
On what I have done, that when I look upon  
It needs must fright  
Me from myself, and which is more  
Insufferable—I fear, from you.

*Ther.* Why should that fright thee, which most  
comforts me?

I glory in it, and shall smile i' th' grave,  
To think our love was such, that nothing but  
Itself could e'er destroy it.

*Agl.* Destroy it? can it have ever end? Will  
you

Not be thus courteous, then, in the other world?  
Shall we not be together there as here?

*Ther.* I cannot tell whether I may or not.

*Agl.* Not tell?

*Ther.* No. The gods thought me unworthy of thee  
here.

And when thou art more pure, why  
Should I not more doubt it?

*Agl.* Because, if I shall be more pure, I shall  
Be then more fit for you. Our priests  
Assure us an Elysium; and can  
That be Elysium, where true lovers must not  
Meet? Those powers that made our loves, did  
they

Intend them mortal, would sure have made them  
Of a coarser stuff, would they not, my lord?

*Ther.* Pr'ythee, speak still;  
This music gives my soul such pleasing business;  
Takes it so wholly up, it finds not leisure to  
Attend unto the summons death does make.  
Yet they are loud and peremptory now,  
And I can only—

[*Faints.*

*Agl.* Some pitying power inspire me with  
A way to follow him: heart, wilt thou not

Break <sup>1</sup> of thyself !

*Zir.* My griefs besot me.  
His soul will sail out with this purple tide,  
And I shall here be found staring after 't,  
Like a man that's too short o' th' ship, and 's left  
Behind upon the land. [She swoons.]

*Enter ANDRAGES.*

O, welcome, welcome ; here [he] lies, Andrages,  
Alas, too great a trial for thy art.

*And.* There's life in him : from whence these  
wounds ?

*Zir.* O, 'tis no time for story.

*And.* 'Tis not mortal, my lord ; bow him gently ;  
And help me to infuse this into him.

The soul is but asleep, and not gone forth.

*Ther.* O, O !

*Zir.* Hark ! the prince does live.

*Ther.* Whate'er thou art hast given me a new <sup>2</sup> life,  
And with it all my cares and miseries,  
Expect not a reward : no, not a thanks.  
If thou wouldst merit from me  
(Yet who would be guilty of so lost an action ?)  
Restore me to my quietness again,  
For life and that are most incompatible.

*Zir.* Still in despairs ! I did not think till now  
'Twas in the power of fortune to have robb'd  
Thersames of himself ; for pity, sir,  
And reason live ; if you will die,  
Die not Aglaura's murther'd,  
That's not so handsome ; at least  
Die not her murthered and her murtherer too ;  
For that will surely follow. Look up, sir ;  
This violence of fortune cannot last ever :  
Who knows but all these clouds are shadows

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *Break it.*]

<sup>2</sup> [Old copies, *now a.*]

To set off fairer<sup>1</sup> days. If it grows blacker,  
And the storms do rise, this harbour's always open.

*Ther.* What sayest thou, Aglaura?

*Agl.* What says Andrages?

*And.* Madam, would heaven [that] his mind would  
admit

As easy cure, as will his body! <sup>2</sup> 'twas  
Only want of blood, and two hours' rest  
Restores him to himself.

*Zir.* And by that time,

It may be, heaven will give our miseries some ease.  
Come, sir, repose upon a bed;  
There's time enough to-day.

*Ther.* Well, I will still obey,  
Though I must fear it will be with me  
But as it is with tortured men,  
Whom states preserve only to rack again. [Exeunt.

*Take off table.* Enter ZIRIFF with a taper.

*Zir.* All fast too here! They sleep to-night  
I' their winding-sheets, I think: there's such  
A general quiet. O, here's light, I warrant you;  
For lust does take as little rest as care or age:  
Courting her glass, I swear—fie! that's a flatterer,  
madam,  
In me you shall see trulier what you are. [He knocks.

Enter QUEEN.

*Orb.* What make you up at this strange hour, my lord?

*Zir.* My business is my boldness' warrant, madam;  
And I could well afford t' have been without  
It now, had heav'n so pleas'd.

*Orb.* 'Tis a sad prologue;  
What follows, in the name of virtue?

*Zir.*

The king—

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *your fairer.*] VOL. I.

<sup>2</sup> [Old copies *his body will.*] N

*Orb.* Ay, what of him? Is well, is he not?

*Zir.*

Yes.

If to be on 's journey to the other world  
Be to be well, he is.

*Orb.* Why, he 's not dead, is he?

*Zir.* Yes, madam, dead.

*Orb.* How? where?

*Zir.* I do not know particulars.

*Orb.* Dead!

*Zir.* Yes, madam.

*Orb.* Art sure he 's dead?

*Zir.* Madam, I know him as certainly dead,  
As I know you too must die hereafter.

*Orb.* Dead!

*Zir.* Yes, dead.

*Orb.* We must all die.

The sisters spin no cables for us mortals.  
They 're Thread, and Time, and Chance.  
Trust me, I could weep now;  
But watery distillations do but ill  
On graves, they make the lodging colder. [*She knocks.*]

*Zir.* What would you, madam?

*Orb.* Why, my friends, my lord,  
I would consult, and know what 's to be done.

*Zir.* Madam, 'tis not safe to raise the court,  
Things thus unsettled; if you please to have—

*Orb.* Where 's Ariaspes?

*Zir.* In his dead sleep by this time, sure.

*Orb.* I know he is not. Find him instantly.

*Zir.* I 'm gone. [*Turns back again.*]  
But, madam, why make you choice of him, from whom  
If the succession meet disturbance, all  
Must come of danger?

*Orb.* My lord, I am not yet so wise as to  
Be jealous; pray, dispute no further.

*Zir.* Pardon me, madam, if, before I go,  
I must unlock a secret to you; such

A one as, while the king did breathe,  
Durst know no air ; Zorannes lives.

*Orb.* Ha !

*Zir.* And in the hope of such a day as this  
Has lingered out a life, snatching, to feed  
His almost famish'd eyes, sights now and then  
Of you, in a disguise.

*Orb.* Strange ! this night  
Is big with miracle.

*Zir.* If you did love him,  
As they say you did, and do so still ;  
'Tis now within your power !

*Orb.* I would it were,  
My lord ; but I am now no private woman ;  
If I did love him once (as 'tis so long ago,  
I have forgot), my youth and ignorance may well  
Excuse 't.

*Zir.* Excuse it ?

*Orb.* Yes, excuse it, sir.

*Zir.* Though I confess I lov'd his father much,  
And pity him, yet having offer'd it unto  
Your thoughts, I have discharg'd a trust ; and zeal  
Shall stray no further. Your pardon, madam. [Exit.

*Orb.* Maybe, 'tis but a plot to keep off Ariaspes'  
Greatness, which he must fear, because he knows  
He hates him : for these great statesmen  
That, when time has made bold with the king  
And subject, throwing down all fence,  
That stood betwixt their power  
And others' right, are on a change,  
Like wanton salmons coming in with floods,  
That leap o'er wires and nets, and make their way,  
To be at the return to every one a prey.

### *Enter ZIRIFF.*

*Zir.* Look here, vain thing, and see thy sins full  
blown !

There's scarce a part in all this face thou hast  
 Not been forsown by, heav'n forgive thee for 't !  
 For thee I lost a father, country, friends :  
 Myself almost ; for I lay buried long.  
 And when there was no use thy love could pay  
 Too great, thou mad'st the principal away.<sup>1</sup>  
 As wantons, entering a garden, take  
 The first fair flow'r they meet, and treasure 't in  
 Their laps ; then seeing more, do make  
 Fresh choice again, throwing in one and one,  
 Till at length the first poor flower, over-charged  
 With too much weight, withers and dies. So hast  
 Thou dealt with me, and, having kill'd me first,  
 I will kill—

*Orb.* Hold, hold ! not for my sake, but  
 Orbella's, sir : a bare and single death  
 Is such a wrong to justice, I must needs  
 Except against it.

Find out a way to make me long a-dying ;  
 For death's no punishment : it is the sense,  
 The pains and fears afore, that makes a death.  
 To think what I had had, had I had you,  
 What I have lost in losing of myself,  
 Are deaths far worse than any you can give.  
 Yet kill me quickly ; for, if I have time,  
 I shall so wash this soul of mine with tears,  
 Make it so fine, that you would be afresh  
 In love with it, and so perchance I should  
 Again come to deceive you.

[She rises up weeping, and hanging  
 down her head.]

*Zir.* So rises day, blushing at night's deformity :  
 And so the pretty flowers blubber'd with dew,

<sup>1</sup> [In the margin of the copy of 1658 occurs the word *prompt*, apparently as a direction to the speaker to utter these words quickly. It is clear that it forms no part of the text.]

And over-wash'd with rain, hang down their heads.  
I must not look upon her.

[Queen goes towards him.]

*Orb.* Were but the lilies in this face as fresh  
As are the roses ; had I but innocence join'd  
To these blushes, I should then be bold ; for when  
They went a-begging, they were ne'er denied—  
'Tis but a parting kiss, sir !

*Enter PASITHAS, and Two Guards.*

*Zir.* I dare not grant it. Pasithas, away with her !  
[*Exeunt.*]

*A bed pui out.* *THERSAMES and AGLAURA on it,*  
*ANDRAGES by.*

*Ther.* She wak'd me with a sigh, and yet she sleeps  
Herself, sweet innocence ! Can it be sin to love  
This shape ? and if it be not, why am  
I persecuted thus ? She sighs again ;  
Sleep that drowns all cares, cannot, I see, charm love's.  
Blest pillows, through whose fineness does appear  
The violets, lilies, and the roses  
You are stuff'd withal ! to whose softness I owe  
The sweet of this repose, permit me to  
Leave with you this. See, if I have not wak'd her.

[*Kisses them ; she wakes.*]

Sure I was born, Aglaura, to destroy  
Thy quiet.

*Agl.* Mine, my lord !  
Call you this drowsiness a quiet then ?  
Believe me, sir, 'twas an intruder I  
Much struggled with, and have to thank a dream,  
Not you, that it thus left me.

*Ther.* A dream ! What dream, my love ?

*Agl.* I dreamt, sir, it was day,  
And the fear you should be found here—

*Enter ZORANNES.*

*Zor.* Awake ! How is it with you, sir ?

*Ther.* Well, extremely well, so well that, had I now  
No better a remembrancer than pain,  
I should forget I e'er was hurt, thanks to  
Heav'n and good Andrages.

*Zor.* And more than thanks ; I hope we yet shall  
live

To pay him. How old 's the night ?

*And.* Far spent,

I fear, my lord.

*Zor.* I have a cause that should be heard  
Yet ere daybreak, and I must needs entreat  
You, sir, to be the judge in 't.

*Ther.* What cause, Zorannes ?

*Zor.* When you have promis'd —

*Ther.* 'Twere hard I should deny thee anything.

[*Exit Zorannes.*]

Know'st thou, Andrages, what he means ?

*And.* Nor cannot guess, sirs. [*Draw in the bed.*] I  
read

A trouble in his face, when first he left you ;  
But understood it not.

*Re-enter ZORANNES, with KING, ARIASPES, IOLAS,  
QUEEN, and Two or Three Guard.*

*Zor.* Have I not pitch'd my nets like a good hunts-  
man ?

Look, sir, the noblest of the herd are here.

*Ther.* I am astonished.

*Zor.* This place is yours. [*Helps him up.*]

*Ther.* What wouldest thou have me do ?

*Zor.* Remember, sir, your promise,  
I could do all I have to do alone ;

But justice is not justice, unless 't be justly done :  
Here then I will begin ; for here began my wrongs.

This woman, sir, was wondrous fair, and wondrous kind :

Ay, fair and kind ; for so the story runs.

She gave me look for look and glance for glance,  
And every sigh like Echo's was return'd.

We sent up vow by vow, promise on promise,  
So thick and strangely multiplied, that sure

We gave the heavenly registries their business ;  
And other mortals' oaths then went for nothing.

We felt each other's pains, each other's joys :

Thought the same thought, and spoke the very same ;  
We were the same, and I have much ado

To think she could be ill, and I not be

So too, and after this, sir, all this, she

Was false, lov'd him and him ; and had

I not begun revenge, till she

Had made an end of changing, I had had

The kingdom to have killed. What does this

Deserve ?

*Ther.* A punishment he best can make,  
That suffered the wrong.

*Zor.* I thank you, sir,  
For him I will not trouble you. His life is mine ;

I won it fairly ; and his is yours :

He lost it foully to you—

To him, sir, now :

A man so wicked that he knew no good,  
But so as 't made his sins the greater for 't.  
Those ills, which (singly acted) bred despair  
In others, he acted daily, and ne'er thought  
Upon them.

The grievance each particular has against him,  
I will not meddle with ; it were to give him a  
Long life to give them hearing :

I 'll only speak my own.

First then the hopes of all my youth, and a  
Reward which heaven hath settled on me

(If holy contracts can do anything),  
 He ravish'd from me, kill'd my father—  
 Aglaura's father, sir, [and] would have whor'd my  
 sister,  
 And murthered my friend. This is all !  
 And now your sentence, sir.

*Ther.* We have no punishment can reach these  
 crimes ;

Therefore 'tis justest sure to send him, where  
 They 're wittier to punish than we are herè ;  
 And 'cause repentance oft stops that proceeding,  
 A sudden death is sure the greatest punishment.

*Zor.* I humbly thank you, sir.

*King.* What a strange glass th' have showed me  
 now myself

In ! Our sins, like to our shadows, when  
 Our day was<sup>1</sup> in its glory, scarce appear'd,  
 Towards our evening how great and monstrous  
 They are !

*Zor.* Is this all you have to say ?

[Draws.]

*Ther.*

Hold !

Now go you up.

*Zor.* What mean you, sir ?

*Ther.* Nay, I denied not you. That all  
 Thy accusations are just, I must acknowledge ;  
 And to these crimes I have but this t' oppose—  
 He is my father and thy sovereign !

'Tis wickedness, dear friend, we go about  
 To punish ; and when we have murther'd him,  
 What difference is there betwixt him and  
 Ourselves, but that he first was wicked ?  
 Thou now wouldest kill him, 'cause he kill'd thy  
 father ;  
 And when thou 'st killed [him], have not I the self-  
 Same quarrel ?

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *is.*]

*Zor.* Why, sir, you know you would  
Yourself have done it.

*Ther.* True : and therefore 'tis  
I beg his life. There was no way for me  
To have redeem'd th' intent, but by a real  
Saving of it. If he did ravish from  
Thee thy Orbella, remember that that  
Wicked issue had a noble parent—love.

[*Be ready, Courtiers and Guard, with their swords  
drawn at the breasts of the prisoners.*

Remember how he lov'd Zorannes, when  
He was Ziriff ! There's something due to that.  
If you must needs have blood for your revenge,  
Take it here. [*Offers his breast.*] Despise it not,  
Zorannes.

[*Zorannes turns away.*

The gods themselves, whose greatness makes  
The greatness of our sins, and heightens 'm, above  
What we can do unto each other, accept  
Of sacrifice for what we do 'gainst them.  
Why should not you ? and 'tis much thriftier too :  
You cannot let out life there, but my honour  
Goes ; and all the life you can take here,  
Posterity will give me back again ;  
See, Aglaura weeps !  
That would have been ill rhetoric in me,  
But where it is, it cannot but persuade.

*Zor.* Th' have thaw'd the ice about my heart ; I  
know  
Not what to do.

*King.* Come down, come down :  
I will be king again.  
There's none so fit to be the judge of this  
As I. The life you show'd such zeal to save  
I here could willingly return you back ;  
But that's the common price of all revenge.

*Enter Guard, ORSAMES, PHILAN, Courtiers, ORITHIE,  
SEMANTHE.*

*Iol. Ari.* Ha, ha, ha ! how they look now ?

*Zor.* Death : what 's this ?

*Ther.* Betray'd again !

All th' ease our fortune gives our misery<sup>1</sup> is hope,  
And that, still proving false, grows part of it.

*King.* From whence this guard ?

*Ari.* Why, sir, I did corrupt,  
While we were his prisoners,  
One of his own to raise the court.  
Shallow souls ! that thought we could not counter-  
mine !

Come, sir, you 're in good posture to despatch them.

*King.* Lay hold upon his instrument. Fond man !  
Dost think I am in love with villany ?  
All the service they can do me here is but  
To let these see the right I do them now  
Is unconstrain'd : then thus I do proceed :—  
Upon the place Zorannes lost his life  
I vow to build a tomb ; and on that tomb  
I vow to pay three whole years' penitence,  
If in that time I find, that heaven and you  
Can pardon, I shall find again the way  
To live amongst you.

*Ther.* Sir, be not so cruel  
To yourself ; this is an age.

*King.* 'Tis now irrevocable ;  
Thy father's lands I give thee back again, and his  
commands ;  
And with them leave to wear the tiara  
That man there has abus'd. To you, Orbella,  
Who, it seems, are foul as well as I,  
I do prescribe the self-same physic I

---

<sup>1</sup> [Old copies, *miseries.*]

Do take myself ; but in another place  
And for a longer time—Diana's nunnery.

*Orb.* Above my hopes.

[*Aside.*]

*King.* [To *Ari.*] For you, who still have been  
The ready instrument of all my cruelties,  
And there have cancell'd all the bonds of brother,  
Perpetual punishment ! Nor, should this line expire,  
Shall thy right have a place.

*Ari.*

Hell and furies ! [*Exit.*]

*King.* [To *Zir.*] Thy crimes deserve no less ; yet,  
'cause thou wert  
Heaven's instrument to save my life,  
Thou only hast the time of banishment  
I have of penitence.

[*Comes down. Ziriff offers to kiss the King's hand.*]

*Iol.* May it be plague

And famine here, till I return. No : thou shalt not  
Yet forgive me.

*King.* Aglaura, thus I freely part with thee,  
And part with all fond flames and warm desires.  
I cannot fear new agues in my blood, since I  
Have overcome the charms thy beauty had :  
No other ever can have so much pow'r.

Thersames, thou look'st pale ! Is 't want of rest ?

*Ther.* No, sir ; but that's a story for your ear.

[*They whisper.*]

*Ors.* A strange and happy change.

*Ori.* All joys wait on you ever !

*Agl.* Orithie,

How for thy sake now could I wish love were  
No mathematic point, but would admit  
Division, that Thersames might, though at  
My charge, pay thee the debt he owes thee.

*Ori.* Madam, I loved the prince, not myself.  
Since his virtues have their full rewards,  
I have my full desires.

*King.* What miracles of preservation have we had ?

How wisely have the stars prepar'd you for felicity?  
Nothing endears a good more than the contemplation  
Of the difficulty we had to attain to it :  
But see, night's empire's out !  
And a more glorious auspiciously does begin ;  
Let us go serve the gods, and then prepare  
For jollity. This day I'll borrow from my vows.  
Nor shall it have a common celebration ;  
Since it must be  
A high record to all posterity.                   [*Exeunt omnes.*

## *EPILOGUE.*

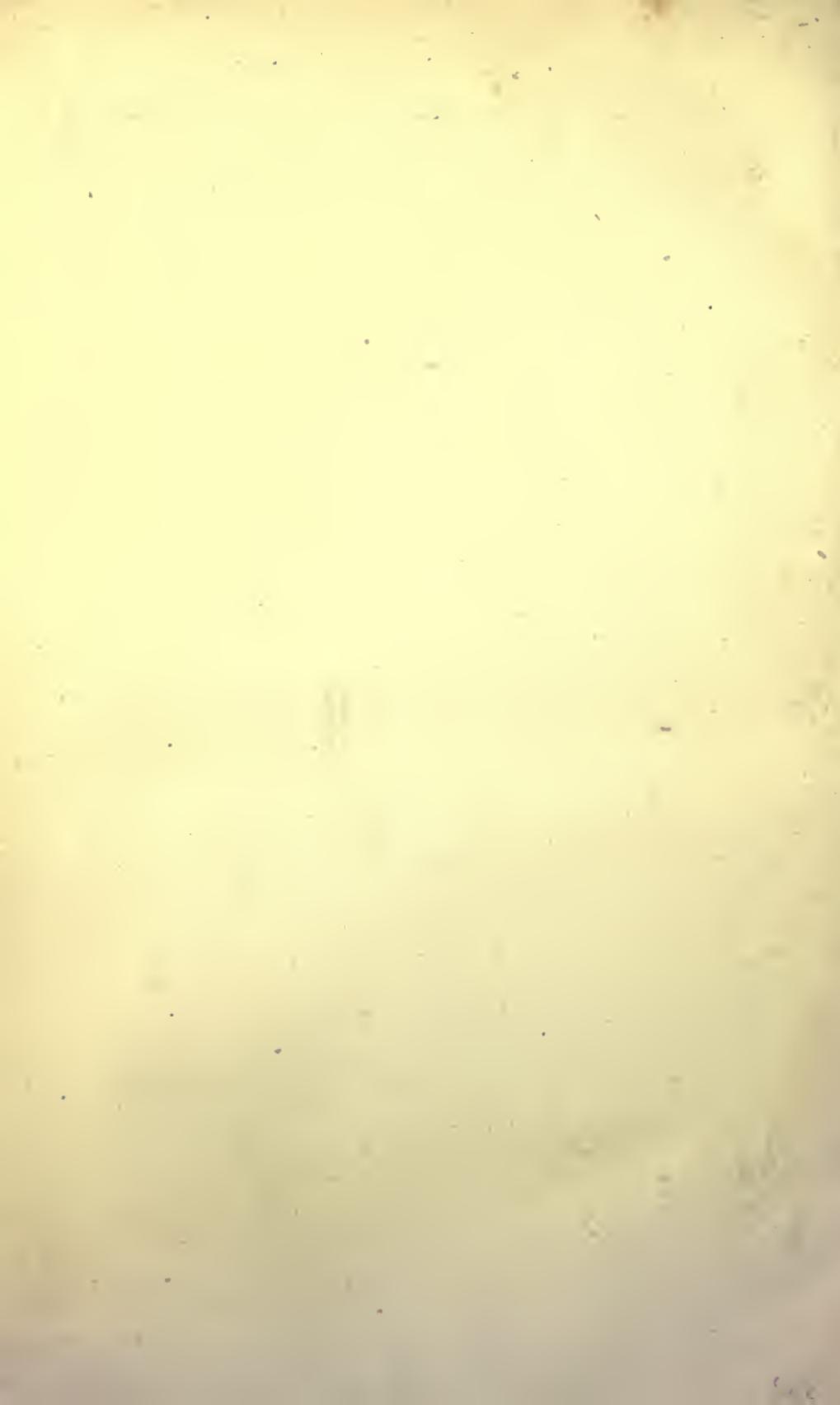
—o—

PLAYS are like feasts, and every act should be  
Another course, and still variety :  
But, in good faith, provision of wit  
Is grown of late so difficult to get  
That, do we what we can, we are not able  
Without cold meats to furnish out the table.  
Who knows but it was needless too ? maybe,  
'Twas here, as in the coachman's trade ; and he  
That turns in the least compass shows most art,  
Howe'er, the poet hopes, sir, for his part,  
You 'll like not those so much who show their skill  
In entertainment, as who show their will.

FINIS.











PR            Suckling, (Sir) John  
3718        The poems  
A1  
1874  
v.1

**PLEASE DO NOT REMOVE  
CARDS OR SLIPS FROM THIS POCKET**

---

---

**UNIVERSITY OF TORONTO LIBRARY**

---

